



RELIGIOUS COURTSHIP:

BEING 1490. i. 4.

Historical DISCOURSES

ONTHE

Necessity of Marrying RELIGIOUS HUSBANDS and WIVES only.

ASALSO

Of HUSBANDS and WIVES being of the fame Opinions in RELIGION with one another.

WITHAN

APPENDIX

OFTHE

Necessity of taking none but RELIGIOUS SERVANTS, and a Proposal for the better managing of Servants.

The NINTH EDITION.

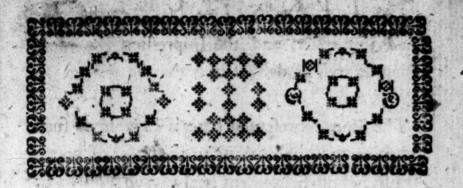
Daniel Detac

LONDON,

Printed for P. SIMPSON, at the Three Bibles in the Strand. 1766.

Defocto) Trumps 137





THE

PREFACE.

S this Way of Writing in Cases not much unlike this, has been approved of, and has met with great Success in other Hands; it has been an Encouragement to this Undertaking.

Historical Dialogues, it must be confessed, have a very taking Elegancy in them, and the Story being handed forward in short Periods, and quick Returns, makes the retaining it in the

a 2

Mind

PREFACE.

Mind the easier, and the Impression the more lasting as well as delightful.

The Story represented here is capable of such and so many Applications to the Cases of young People, whose Settlement is always in View, that there will never be a Time when the Instruction will be useless.

If any Body should object, that too much is put here upon the Woman's Part, and that a Lady cannot be supposed, in the Midst of her Lover's Addresses, to take upon her to demand such an Account of himself as is here suggested; that sew Men will stoop to such an Examination; and sew Women venture the Loss of their Lovers upon such a Subject: Let such consider how small the Satisfaction here proposed on the Lady's Part is, and that no Gentleman can think hard a Woman should be satisfied, whether he is a Christian or a Heathen; a Man of Religion or an Atheist; and indeed no Man of any tolerable Shate of Sense, will address himself to a Lady for Marriage, but he will take Care to anticipate

PREFACE

her Inquiries of that Kind, by shewing some Concern, for knowing what she is herself.

The universal Neglect of this Triffe, both in Men and Women, is what this Book is designed to correct, and there needs no greater Satire upon that Part, than the Success of the several Cases here related: (viz.) The happy Life of the youngest Sister, who came into the Measures proposed; and the miserable Condition of the second Sister, who rashly threw herself into the Arms of a Man of differing Principles from her own, though blest with all the Good-humour in the World.

In these Accounts, the very great Consequence of being equally yoked, is illustrated; and it appears here how essential a Share of Religion, and a Harmony of Principles in Religion, are to the Felicity of a conjugal Life.

To those who do not cast off all Concern for themselves; who do not make marrying a mere Leap in the Dark, and as the first Lady expresses it, rushing like a Horse into the Battle, these

Things

PREFACE.

Things will be of some Moment. As to those that are void of Care of those Matters, they must go on, and pay for their Experience; let them take heed, and buy it as cheap as they can.

If the Women seem to be favoured in this Story, and have the better Part of the Staff put into their Hands, it is because really the Hazard is chiefly on their Side, and they are generally the greatest Sufferers in the Success: But if it were otherwise, yet, if they are treated with more than ordinary Regard, the Author hopes they will not lay that Sin to his Charge,

The Appendix to this Work speaks for itself: Irreligious Servants in some Respects, are the Plague of Families, and keep our Houses always in Disorder. 'Tis a wonderful Thing to reslect on, that so scandalous an Evil, so easy to be rectified, should have gone to such a Degree as it has in the World; and that Masters and Mistresses of Families, have not long ago for their own Ease, and for the Satisfaction of one another, come to a general Law, for the managing, the punishing, and above all, for the recommend-

PREFACE

ing of Servants; which, if they would do, they would easily, I say, bring them to know themselves, and do their Duty; neither of which is
the Case among Servants at this Time.

But 'tis all our own Faults; we recommend Sluts and Thieves, Drones, and saucy, insolent Fellows and Wenches: I say, we recommend them to one another, without any Concern for our Neighbour's Sasety and Peace; in a Word, to pay the Debt of Charity for those Creatures, which have abused us, we forget the Debt of Justice to one another, and betray the Considence which one House-keeper and Neighbour owes to another, in one of the most essential Articles of their Families Quiet.

This is all exposed here; and though this Part is very short, being but an Accident to the other Discourses; yet, I presume to say, it will be as acceptable, and, in its Kind, as useful as any of the rest.

This Ninth Edition of this Work recommends itself upon this express Condition, viz. That the Author

PREFACE

Author has not found Occasion to alter any thing in the Eighth (Errors of the Press excepted) nor have I found Room for any Additions, that usual Pretence to set off new Impressions, and impose upon those who have bought the first; being still fully satisfied, that the Goodness of the Design, and the Usefulness of the Subject, will make this Work acceptable where-ever it comes.



Ladron away of them blockers we Act

erante Modernais as transfer host transmitte

Lights of Tongon in the Care of the configuration of the Care of t

KIT EXP TON THE



RELIGIOUS COURTSHIP.

PARTI.

THERE lived in a Village near London, an ancient grave Gentleman of a good Estate, which he had gained by Trade. having been bred a Merchant, though of a very good Family too; he had been a Man'in great Business, but his Circumstances being easy, and his Love of a retired Life increasing with his Years, he had left off his Business, and taken a House a Mile or two out of Town; he was a Widower at the Time of this Assair, his Wise having been dead some Years before.

He had five or fix Children, and all grown up, but none settled in the World, though he had an Estate sufficient to give them very plentiful Fortunes. His three Daughters were very agreeable Women, and, which was still better, were very sober, modest, sensible and religious young Ladies, two of them especially: And as the Character of their Father, and the Fortune he was able to give them, recommended them very well to the World; so they had several Gentlemen that made honourable and handsome Proposals to their Father for their Marriage.

I shall most carefully avoid giving any Room here so much as to guess what Opinion in Religion they were bred up in, or whether the old Gentleman was a Churchman or a Difference; and the same Caution I shall use with all the rest of the Persons whom I shall bring upon the Stage in the Course of this Story: My Reason for which every Body will understand by the Nature of the Relation, and of the Times we live in.

The Father of these Ladies had been a Man always, till now, hurried in the World; being crouded with a vast Business, taken up with getting Money, and with growing rich; so that he neither had much Concern for, or indeed took any Care of, the Education or Instruction of his Children, but lest them wholly to the Conduct of their Mother. Nor was it any great Loss to the Children, especially to the Daughters, their Mother being a most pious, religious, and virtuous Lady, who was not only extraordinarily qualified to instruct her Children, but gave up her whole Time to it from her Childhood.

One Morning, a little before her Death, calling her Daughters to her, she told them, among other Things, That as to Marriage, she had but two Injunctions to lay upon them, which, as she was not likely to live to see them settled, she would desire them to lay down as Maxims in the Choice of their Husbands; and which she would, as upon her Death-bed, if her Words had any extraordinary Instuence upon them, oblige them to observe

Strictly, viz.

1, Never to marry any Man, whatever his Person or Fortune might be, that did not, at least, profess to be a Religious Man.

2. Never to marry any Man, how religious soever he may feem to be, if he was not of the same Principles and

Opinion in Religion as themselves.

And as this was but a little before her Death, so the Daughters were more than ordinarily touched with the Sense of it, and resolved to pursue it exactly. How they did pursue it, and the Consequences of it, will be seen in the following Dialogues.

-It

It followed some Time after: that a Gentleman of a very good Estate courted the youngest of these Daughters; and making very handsome Proposals to her Father, (for be offered to settle 600 l. per annum apon ber) the Father was exceedingly pleased with the Match; he being a Gentleman thoroughly well bred; an agreeable Person, and, in a Word, nothing appearing to give the least Reason, why he should not be as acceptable to the

Lady as he was to the Father.

e

or

a

be

nd

As he came thus recommended to the Father, there appeared nothing disagreeable in it to the young Lady; nor had she at his first Appearance the least Exception to make against the Gentleman as to his Person: Indeed, as to his Estate, though her Fortune was very handsome, yet his was so far beyond it, that there was no Comparison in the Case; and besides all this, she had this engaging Circumstance in the Proposal, viz. That she being the youngest of the three Daughters, the Gentleman had passed over her two eldest Sisters, and had singled her out by his more particular Fancy; giving her that undeniable Mark of his Assection, viz. That she would be the Wife of his Choice, and consequently that she would have an uncommon Security of the Sincerity of his Love to here

The Father opposed his Proposal a little at first, as a Slight offered to his eldest Daughters; but the Gentleman told him, That he hoped, if he accepted his Design of coming into his Family, he would give him Leave to take the Person his Judgment had made Choice of, and that he thought he might be happy with: That it would be a very hard Circumstance to him, and what he could not think of with Patience, to marry one of his Daughters, and be in Love with another: That he was very far from offering any Slight to the eldest, letting him know that happening to see the youngest first, he found such Suitableness, and something so agreeable in her to him, that he resolved to look no farther: That perhaps, if he had seen the eldest or the second Daughter first, it might have been the same Thing; but that as he could not an-

fwer for the Biass of his Fancy, so neither could he answer it to his own Conduct, not to chuse her, that was from the first Moment he saw her, the only Woman in the World that he ever thought could make him happy.

Her Father could make no Return to an Answer that had so much Weight in it, and which appeared to be so sincere; and therefore not acquainting his eldest Daughter with the Design he had to propose her to him, he took Occasion to talk to them all together one Morning as they were drinking Chocolate; and begins merrily with them thus:



DIALOGUE I.

Father. WELL, Girls, you little think now, which of you all is like to be first married. What fay you, Child, (turning to the youngest) I hope you are content to let your eldest Sisters go before you?

ad Daughter. Yes, yes, Sir; I desire both my Sisters may go before me; for I see nothing in the World to

make me in Haste.

Fa. Why, what's the Matter that you are so out of Love with the World all on a sudden? Is it that you think yourself too good for every Body, or every Body too good for you?

3d Da. No, Sir; I am neither so vain to think the first, or so humble to think the last; but I desire to think

of myfelf as I ought to think.

Fa. How is that, pray?

3d Da. Why, Sir, I think I live too well to change for the worse; and this is not an Age to change for the better; and therefore I desire to be as I am.

Fa. Why is this Age fo much worse than that which

went before, pray?

3d Da. Nay, Sir, I don't know; but I am very well fatisfied, Sir, with your first Proposal, that my Sisters may

try before me.

Fa. Well, well; and if you go before your Sisters, there will be no Harm done, if it be to your Liking, I hope; I dare say, none of your Sisters will be angry: At which, the two eldest said, No, no; we shall be very glad to see it: And so they fell to jesting with their younger Sister, till they almost anger'd her.

You are mighty difficult, fays the eldest Sister, that you fall upon the whole World, as if there was nothing good

enough for you.

Says the second Sister, She will be as easily pleased as another, I warrant her, if she was talked to in earnest; upon which, notwithstanding their Father was present, they sell to rallying one another between Jest and Earnest, a little too warmly, as follows:

3d Da. That may be; as my eldest Sisters teach me, I hope they intend to set me a good Example; for 'tis

their Turn first.

in your Way, you'll hardly put it off, and fay, Your Bet-

ters must go before you.

3d Da. For all you are both my eldest sisters, I question whether you understand what a good Offer means; and it may be have considered it no more than 1; there's a great deal in that Word.

1/1 Da, O! I'll explain it in a few Words; a good E-

State, and a Man you like.

2d Da. Nay; you might have stopt at the first: 'Tis no Matter what the Man is, if the Estate be but good.

3d Da. Is that the Example my eidest Sisters intend to

Fa. Ay; and a good Example too, Child.

3d Da. You are disposed to jest, Sir; but I believe

A

VOU

you would not be pleased with such a Way of chusing ! Husband for any of your Daughters.

2d Da. I hope my Father would; I am fure I should.

3d Da. That's no Token to me that you have confi-

dered much of the Matter, as I said before.

2d Da. Why, what would you have belides a good Eflate? What Matter is it what the Man is? I would pass by a great many homely Defects for a good. Settlement.

3d Da. As for the homely Defects, perhaps I may be no nicer than you, if there was nothing else wanting.

2d Da. What can be wanting if there be Money enough?
3d Da. Nothing, I hope, when my Sister comes to chuse.
2d Da. No; nor when you come to chuse neither, it may be.

3d Da. I am afraid there will.

as I know of.

3d Da. No! What, would you have your Husband

have no Religion?

2d Da. What have I to do with his Religion? He'll be a Christian I hope.

2d Da. And what if he thould not?

2d Da. Nay, then he may be a Heathen and he will, what's that to me?

3d Da. That's a Proof of what I faid before, that you have not confidered much of the Matter.

2d Da. No, indeed not I; but I suppose my younger Sister has

3d Da. Your younger Sister never told you so yet: But methinks there requires very little Consideration, to say, if I ever should marry, I would not have a Rake, a Heathen, a profligate Fellow, a Man without Religion, purely for his Money; if you think these I hipgs no Objections, and are got over such Scruples in the Case, I must tell you, Sister, that it seems, the Business has been more in your Head than in mine, or at least to worse l'urpose.

2d Da. Well, it may be fo; and then it may follow,

that when you have considered more of it too, you will be of my Mind.

3d Da. What, to marry an Atheist! a Man of no Prin-

ciples! that knows neither God nor Devil?

2d Da. Ay, ay; that, or any Thing elfe, if you have but a good Settlement, Child. A good Settlement will make up all those Things; you'd take him, I warrant you.

3d Da. No, Sifter; not for all I can fee with my Eyes.

2d Da. O, you don't know your own Mind, till you come to be tried; we shall see you tell another Tale hereaster.

3d Da. I an't so fond of a Husband, whatever my Si-

[Here the Father seeing that the younger Sister began to be a little moved, and unwilling they should make a Quarrel of it, put an End to the Discourse, and so they soon after withdrew; and then the Father being left with the eldest Daughter only, went on with his Discourse thus to her.]

Fa. Child, you are a little too hard upon your Sister.

Da. She should not have taken it so, Sir; she knows it is but in Jest.

Fa. But you do not know whether it may be all in Jest

or no.

Da. Nay, Sir; I am fure all our Share in it was in Jest; if there is any Thing in it, I should have talked in another Way.*

Da. Nay, Sir, then I understand how it is.

Fa. Well, Child; how will you take it, to fee your

youngest Sister married before you?

Da. O very well, Sir, I shall be very glad of it, if it be for her Good: But if I were to speak my Mind, I should say something to it about her, that it may be there may be Occasion for.

Fa. Well, pray speak your Mind then.

Here she was very inquisitive with her Father to know if there was any Thing in it or not, at which he only smiled.

Da. Why, Sir, for all my Sister's bantering her, I must own, our youngest Sister will not be easily pleased in a Husband, as Times go now.

Fa. How do you mean, Child?

Da. Why, Sir, I mean, that though she may be the first of us that shall be asked, she may be the last of us that will be married.

Fa. Ay, my Girl! Is it so with you then! What have you been both making your Bargains without me! And are they so near concluding: That's very hard.

Da. Dear Father, how could you have such a Thought of us! You are quite wrong; you don't understand me at all.

Fa. Nay; how can I understand you any other Way?

P

1

1

If it is not fo, explain yourfelf.

ed; the will scarce take the first that comes, I dare say.

Fa. No; then I shall take it very ill: For I assure

you, he that I mean is a very good one.

Da. Nay, if he is a good one, it may be, she may; but 'tis a Question, Sir, whether her good one and your good one may be both of a Sort.

Fa. Why, he has a very good Estate, I'll assure you;

far beyond what she can expect.

Da. That's a good Thing; but that will go but a little

Way with ber, I know.

Fa. Well, he is a very handsome, well accomplished, well-bred Gentleman; she cannot mislike him; he is a most agreeable young Gentleman, I affure you.

Da. That won't go a Bit the farther with her neither,

I am sure.

Fa. Then he is in Love with her, and has fingled her out from you all; she will be the Wite of his Affection

to be fore; what can she defire more?

Da. She will defire fomething more still, Sir, tho' the last is a Thing will go very far; doubtless, farther than any Thing we have talked on yet: But you know, Sir, my Sister is a very sober, religious Body, and she will never marry any Man that is not so too; though his E-

state, his Person, his Accomplishments, were beyond all the rest of the World: And this was the Reason, why I said she may be first asked and last married.

Fa. Nay, I can't tell, how Matters are, as to that.

Da. I'll affure you, Sir, she will know how it is as to that, before she engages.

Fa: Nay, let her alone to that Part, that's none * of

my Bufiness.

Da. But, Sir, when you know her Mind in that Case, it may prevent your receiving any Disappointment, and prevent her venturing to disoblige you, in resulting what you may propose to her.

Fa No, no; I dare fay the won't refuse him; the is

not fuch a Fool neither.

Da. Dear Sir, then I hope you know he is a fober religious Gentleman.

Fa. I know nothing to the contrary, my Dear; I sup-

pose he is.

Da. But, Sir, it makes me anxious about it, because you faid just now, you could not tell: I hope you will enquire farther into it before you take any farther Steps about it.

Fa. Why, Child, as to that, I dare fay, she need not be concerned; he is so good a humoured Man, he will never cross her in small Matters, especially in religious Things. Child, do you think any Gentleman can be angry, that his Wife is sober and religious? To be sure, she may be as religious as she will.

Da. O dear + Sir, my Sister can never be satisfied so, sure. Fa. Child, what's the Matter? What makes you so

concerned about it?

n

Da. 'Tis a fad Life, Sir, for a Woman to have no Help from her Husband in Things that are good, but only to have Liberty for herself to be as good as she will, or ra-

^{*} Here he was touched a little, and reflected back foftly to himfelf; O why do I fay 'tis none of my Business? Whose Business is it, if it is not mine?

[†] He observes his Daughter concerned at it, and that Tears stood in her Eves.

ther as good as she can: By the same Rule she may be as bad as she will; and it may be, he will like her ne'er the better for the one, nor the worse for tother.

Fa. Well, he is a fine Gentleman, and professes a

great Affection for her.

Da. Before he has feen her, it may be, or knows any Thing of her.

Fa. No, no; he has seen her, but he has never been

in her Company, I know.

Da. So that I find he cares not what she is; he chuses by her Outside only.

Fa. He takes all the rest upon Trust.

Fa. I shall take it very ill from her if the slights him; for I assure you he is not to be slighted, he has very near

2000 /. a Year Estate.

Da. But I am sure, if he is not a religious Man, she will slight him for all that; my Meaning is, she will never bave him; I suppose she will not be rude to him.

Fa. If the does refuse him, the and I shall quarrel, I

affure you, and that very much.

Da. I hope you won't, Sir: You will give her Leave to chuse to her own Liking; it is for her Life, and she must bear the Discontent of it; no Body can bear it for her: Besides, Sir, you know she was very religiously instructed by my Mother.

Fa. Ay, ay; your Mother was a good Woman.

Mother gave her upon her Death-bed, viz. Never to marry a Man that was not religious, whatever other Advantages might offer with him.

. Fa. And did she not give you the same Advice too,

my Dear?

Da. Yes, to be fure, and all of us.

Fa. Well; and yet you heard what your Sister said just now, viz. That she would not trouble herself about it, so there was but a good Estate.

Da. But I hope my Sifter would consider better, if the

came to the Question.

1

1

Fa. Why, Child, would you refuse such a Gentleman, and such a Settlement as this is, that offers now to your Sister, for such a Nicety as that?

Da. It will be Time enough, Sir, for me to answer that Question, when I am offered such a one; there's no

Danger of me yet.

be

CF

2

y

en

les

at.

m;

ar

vill

rer

I

ave

fhe

for

in-

my

r to

Ad

too,

faid

t it,

the

Fa. I hope you would be wifer.

Da. I hope, Sir, I should act as becomes me: But the Case is not mine now; if it was, I should not have begun the Discourse.

Fa. Well; but did your Mother give you fuch Advice,

Child, when the was ill.

Da. Yes, Sir; and more than Advice: For the told us, the would leave it as an Injunction upon us, as far as her dying Words could have any Influence to oblige us.

Fa. Very well: That is as much as to say, she had

found the Inconvenience of it berfelf.*

Da. Nay, indeed, dear Father, we never put any fuch Construction upon it.

Fa. And fo, my Dear, you think your Sifter will not

like this Gentleman, do you?

Da. Indeed, Sir, I cannot tell, till I know what Kind of a Gentleman he is; no, nor then neither: For how can I tell what my Sister will like, or how her Fancy may lead her to act against her Judgment, if she should like him very well upon seeing him?

Fa. But you believe the won't.

Da. If he is not a very fober religious Man, I do think the won't; if she does, the must break in upon the most folemn Resolutions that she is able to make.

Fa. Why, will nothing ferve her but a Saint! Alas! where does the think to find him! What! would the mar-

ry a Bishop?

* Here his Conscience touched him again, though but slightly, and he setched a Sigh, and said softly, If she did, it was nothing but what she had too much Reason to do; for she lived but an uncomfortable Life with me on that very Account.

Da. Nay, Sir, if the thould, the is not fure the thould not be disappointed; Ministers are but Men.

Fa. No, indeed, Child; nor always the best of Men.

neither.

Da. But, Sir, where there is a Profession of Religion, there is some Likelihood of finding the Truth of it; but where there is no Profession, there it cannot be. Now though we are not obliged, to be sure, our Husbands should be Saints, yet I believe we ought to be satisfied, that they are not Atheists: There's a great deal of Disference, Sir, between a Friend to Religion, and an Enemy.

Fa. Well, well; the Girls of this Age do not much trouble themselves about Religion; they generally let it alone, till they see what Religion their Husbands are of.

Da. Dear Father, I hope your Girls are not of that Sort,

Fa. My Daughters are like other Folks Daughters, I

believe; I hope they are not worfe.

be the more Reason to take Care that they should marry religious Husbands, else they would have no Religion at all,

Fa. But how shall you know it?

Da. We must endeavour to be satisfied as well as we can; if we are deceived, it may be our Unhappiness, but will not be our Fault; but if we neglect the Caution, it may be a double Misery, by its being our Sorrow, and our Sin too.

Fa. Well, Child, I hope this Gentleman will please your Sister, as well as he does me, and I would not have her stand in her own Light: It he is not so religious now, it may come afterwards; the Man is a sober, well-bred, ingenious Gentleman.

I can tay nothing to it, Sir, unless I knew him: I only take Notice of the Principle, Sir, on which my Sister goes, and by which I am sure she will act in this Matter, that you may not be disappointed, and resent it; tor I know she will not go from it.

Fa. I'll warrant you: I intend to talk with her about

it; I don't doubt but the will like him very well.

ΓΓWO

h

1

h

t

i

f

f

f

h

h

f

h

n

g

D

n

[Iwo or three Days after this Discourse, the Father brings home this young Gentleman to Dinner, and after Dinner he takes Occasion to talk with his Daughter, and to tell her that this was the Gentleman that he had told her of, that intended to court her, and that he expected she would think of the Thing, and receive him as her own Inclinations and his Merit should direct

The Gentleman did not discourse much with her by herself that Time, having no Design to begin closely at the sirst View; however, he had the Opportunity of walking two or three Turns with her in a green Walk in the Garden, and when he took his Leave, told her he resolved to wait on her again; to which she made him no

Answer for that Time.

old

en

on,

out

wo

ads

ed.

if-

ny.

ich

t it

of.

ort.

Aill

rry

all.

we but

, 10

and

eale

ious

ell-

im:

my

tit;

oout

The next Evening he came again, and after that for feveral Evenings together, when having made her acquainted with his Delign, and laid close Siege to her for some Time, she found nothing to object against him; for he was indeed a most agreeable Person, and her Father pressing her to it on the other Hand, and letting her know what honourable Proposals he had made her, and how he had singled her out from all her Sisters as the Object of his Choice, she began insensibly to find her Affections very strongly biassed in his Favour.

All this while she could make no Discovery of any Thing about Religion in him, nor so much as whether he was well inclined, or perfectly destitute. The Respect he shewed her, and the Distance she kept him at, permitted him not to use any loose Expressions, that might give her any Light into his Principles; and, as he afterwards confessed, he found her so nice in Things of that Kind, that the least dislocated Word would have given her an Offence; and therefore he kept upon his Guard a great while, till at length, when they became more inti-

mate, he abated his usual Caution.

By this Time, as the confessed to her Sister, she did not only like him, but really loved him; and having nothing to object against him, had given him Reason to see, that the defigned to have him: But the was under a great Concern, how to know what he was as to Religion; and terribly afraid, left the should give her Affection such a Loose, that though she should be deceived in the main Point, she should not be able to master herself so much as to go back. As she was musing very seriously upon this one Morning in her Chamber, her eldest Sister came in to her, and began the following Dissourse with her.

Eld. Sift. Sifter I How stands the World with you now? Yo. Sift. Never worse, Sister: If you do not help me,

I am undone.

Eld. Sift. What's the Mattet?

Yo. Sift. Why, if I have this Man, I shall be the miferablest Creature alive.

Eld. Sift. How fo?

To. Sift. O! there's nothing of Religion in him.

Eld. Sift. Are you fure there is not?

To. Sift. No, I am not fure; but we have converfed this Month now, and I never heard one Word about it, come out of his Mouth; and if I speak a Word, he turns it off, and does it so cleverly, that I can't put in another Word for my Life.

Eld. Sift. I warrant you, I would find it out if it were

my Cafe.

Yo. Sift. You could not, I am fure.

Eld. Sift. Why. I would ask him point blank, what Religion he was of.

To. Sift. Why, fo I did, and he laugh'd at me, and faid,

O Child, I am a mighty good Christian.

Eld Sist. I should have told him, I was afraid he wasn't. To. Sist. Why, I did that too, in the very Words; and still he put me off: Another Time I asked him, if he was not a Papist? Immediately he fell a crossing himself all over, and made himself and me so merry at it, that though I was really troubled about it, I could not for my Life get the least serious Thing out of him.

Eld. Sist. Why, you must let it go on a little farther, till you are more intimate; and till you come to talk of

your

70

an

th

rie

be

be wh

w

hi

if

for

hir

it 1

WO

dea

nor

lie

of

dov

and

You

fwe

ed r

olai

your Way of Living, the Affairs of his Family, and House,

and the like,

at

nd

1

in

49

is

in

w?

ie,

ni-

fed

it,

rns

ner

ere

hat

aid,

n't.

and

Was

10

ugh

Lite

ner,

of

To. Sift. Really, Sifter, I am afraid to go on any farther, for I must confess, I begin to have a strange Kindness for him; and if I go any farther, I may love him better, till my Affection may be a Snare to me, and I may be prevailed with to take him without farther Enquiry, which I shall have no Peace in.

Eld. Sift What will you do then?

Yo. St/t. I know not what to do; I wish you would try what you, can make of him; you are free enough with him to talk any Thing of that Kind, sure.

Eld. Sift. I can be free enough, but that won't do it; if he is too cunning for you, he will easily be too cunning

for me.

Yo. Sift. Why, do you think then that, tis a Disguise? Eld. Sift. What else can it be? Do you think he guards himself so strictly against all your Attempts for nothing? Yo. Sift. If I thought so, I should enquire no farther,

it would be a plain Discovery to me.

Eld. Sift. Why fo?

Yo. Sift. Why, if he was a ferious religious Person, he would have no Reason or Occasion to conceal it; if he endeavours to hide himself, 'tis for something that he would not have known, and then I need not ask any more after it.

Eld. Sist. No doubt of it; you cannot think any other. To Sist. But indeed I do think otherwise: I verily believe it is all mere Nature, and nothing but the Height of good Humour; for I have never put the Question downright to him, but in a kind of jesting Way.

Eld. Sift. But why don't you then? Why do you trifle and dally so long with a Thing of such Consequence?

You an't afraid of disobliging him, are you?

To. Sift. No, indeed; I am more afraid, that his An-

wer will disoblige me.

Eld. Sift. Well, well; you had better have it discourfed now, than hereafter; I would not be backward to speak plain to him.

Yo. Sift.

Yo. Sift. If I talk never so plain, he will not give a ferious Answer; he is so merry, I cannot bring him to talk; I beg you will see if you can break in upon him.

Eld. Sift. Come. I'll tell you what I will do, which will be better a great deal than my talking with him by myself: You know we shall walk all together a while after Supper; I'll begin it before you, and you may speak or not speak, take it in Jest or in Earnest, as you find it proper.

To. Sift. Do then; I think that will be very well.

The next Evening the two Sisters and this young Gentleman walking in the Garden, as was vioal after Supper, and talking of feveral indifferent Things, a Servant brings the eldest Sister a Letter, which made some little Stop in their Walk. She opened it, and read it; and he finding her Colour change a little in the Reading, stept up to her; fays he, What's the Matter, Sifter? (for he always called her Sifter) You have no bad News, I bope? Truly, fays the, one Way 'tis no bad News, and another Way 'tis. And turning to her Sifter, the fays, Sir James is dead. He was a little concerned to hear some of the Family was dead, lest it should grieve his Mistress. But she, without any Appearance of Trouble, return'd, Well, fince 'tis the Disposal of Providence, I am not griet'd; for my Aunt is deliver'd from one of the worlt good Husbands that ever a Sober Woman had. He took Hold of that Word prefently, and still directing his Speeh to his Sifter, faid, Worst good Husbands! What Mystery is that? Why truly, fays the Sifter, the Thing is too true: Sir James was a very good Husband in his Humour, and in feveral other Things: But my Lady had a dreadful Life with him. Wby, fays he, that may be very true; a Man may be a very good Husband in one Thing, and be very unkind in another; 'tis owing much to the 'Difagreement of Tempers. The young Lady's Sister was disappointed in his Answer; for the expected he would have enquired into the Particulars, but he put it off as a Thing that did not concern him much; at which the youngest Silter

Ь

ch

by

af-

ak

it

ng

ter

er-

ine

it;

ng,

er?

ws,

and

ays,

ome

efs.

n'd,

not

port

took

neeh'

Ctery

rue:

and

dful

e; a

id be

Tree-

itap-

have

hing

ngeit

Sifter looked at her, and smil'd, which was as much as to tell her, that she had found now, that what she had told her was true; namely, that she would not see it easy to break in upon him. She took the Hint, and resolved the would try the best of her Skill, and she found it soon answered her End: So she return'd to him very smartly, No; no, Sir, fays the, It was not at all from Difagreement of Temper, in this Cafe; it was worse a great deal, it was Disagreemert of Principles; for the Gentleman was of a very good Temper, I affure you. Then if he had a good Wife, returns he, be fould have made it his first Principle to have been obliging and good-temper'd to his Wife. Alas! fays the Lady, be had no Religion, and she is the most pious religious Lady in the World. - It may be then, fays he, she had enough for her and her Husband too. Her being religious, said she, made his Want of it an insufferable Burden to ber. Then she was to blame, fays be; for what need the have been uneafy at that? Not uneasy! fays the, How is it possible a religious Woman can live comfortably with an irreligious profane Husband! O very well, fays he again, What signifies it to a Woman, whether her Husband has any Religion or no? I have better Thoughts of you, fays she, than to believe you speak as you think, that you would be understood fo.

She was now too well fatisfied of what the feared be-

fore, and her Mind was so oppressed with it, that she was not able to hold; but making an Excuse to take her Sister's Letter, and go in and tell her Father the News of the Death of his Brother-in-Law, she left her Sister to walk with her Lover, and went up into her Chamber, and locking herself in, she gave Vent to her Passions by crying vehemently a great While: When she had recovered herself, and considered that she was obliged in Civility to go down again, she composed her Thoughts, and kneeling down, prayed to God to fortify her Soul in the Resolutions she had always taken, never to join herself to any Man that did not acknowledge God, and profess to fear and serve him; and in this Temper she went down to him again,

She was with him after that some Hours in the Evening, as usual; but he observed she was not easy nor free: At length she told him, that upon this Occasion of a Relation being dead, it was proper for the Family, and decent to their Father, that they should make some little Alteration in their Conduct, and defired he would not take it ill, that she retired from him sooner than she used to do. I his he could not object against, and accordingly he took his Leave, believing that her Uneasiness was nothing but the Business of her Aunt's being a Widow, which tho', as she said, she was not much concerned for, yet several Things about it might take up her Thoughts, so as to make her not so perfectly easy, or so good Company as

The was before.

But he was quite out in his Guess; for her Uneasiness was of another Kind, and she had nothing now lay upon her Mind, but how she should discharge herself entirely of his Importunities, and yet without being rude and uncivil to him, and without disobliging her Father; for she was firmly resolved in her Mind never to see him more.

When she had thus taken her Leave of him, she went up into her Chamber, sending her Maid to desire her Siter to come up, and ordering the Servant to excuse her

to her Father for not coming to Supper, for the was in-

disposed.

As foon as her Sister came into her Chamber, she ran to her in the greatest Passon imaginable, and throwing her Arms about her Neck, O Sister, says she, belp me but out of this wretched Business, and I'll never come into the like as long as I live. She said no more, but hung about her, crying violently a great while.]

sift. What can I do for you, Child? You know I'll do any Thing I can.

Yo. sift. Don't you fee how it is now? Was I not right

in my Sufpicion?

sift. I am afraid you are: I don't know what to fay to it.

Yo. sift. Say to it! I would not marry him if he was Lord High Treasurer of Britain.

sift. What will you do then? How will you put him off? Yo. Sift. Put him off! let him put himself off, an he will; I have no more to say to him.

Sift. Nay, you must have more to say to him, you

must tell him so.

e

e

,

ał

0

15

ſs

m

ly

n-

ne

e.

nt

1-

er

Yo. Sift. Not I; I'll never fee him more.

Sile. Child, you must not be rude to him; you don't want Manners.

Yo. Sift. I would not be rude to him, that's it I want

your Help for.

Sist. What can I do in it? I cannot go down to him when he comes, and tell him you will see him no more: You cannot desire me to carry such a Message.

To. Sift. No, that's true, I can't, I know not what to

do, not I.

Sift. Shall I speak to my Father to do it?

Yo. Sift. I think my Father is the fittest to give him his Answer; he brought him first on, and I think he should put him off.

Sift. But he will be in such a Rage, I hardly dare

speak of it to him.

B 2

Yo. Sift.

Yo. Sift. Dear Sister, he won't be angry with you, his

Anger will be all at me.

Sist. You know, Sister, my Father's Infirmity, that if he is angry with any Body, he is angry with every Body: I know he'll use me very ill if I break it to him.

To. Sift. What shall I do then? I'll be gone, if I never

come home again while I live.

Sift. No, no; you shan't be gone; whither will you go? Yo Sift. I beg of you, Sister, speak to my Father about it.

Sift. What shall I say, if he calls for you, will you come down?

Yo. Sift. If I must I will; but keep it off if you can.

The eldest Daughter goes down to her Father a little before Supper; and as soon as he saw her, he began the Discourse.

Fa. Child, what's the Matter with your Sister? Her Maid tells me she is not well: Have you seen her?

Da. Yes, Sir; I came just from her; she is not very

well.

Fa. What ails her? She must not be sick now, whatever she does: Why, it's ominous to be sick when she is wooing.

Da. I believe the is ficker of that, than of any Thing elfe, Sir; if the was delivered from her Gentleman the

would be well enough.

Fa. What do you mean! why I intend they shall be married the Week after next: The Writings are a-drawing and I designed by and by to have given her an hundred Pounds towards buying her Wedding-Clothes.

pa. You may adjourn that a while, Sir, she has chang'd

her Mind.

Fa. Chang'd her Mind! what do you * mean!

^{*} The Father rifes up in a great Passion and walks about the Room.

Da. Dear Father, do not be angry with me; 'tis no Business of mine; I had rather say no more of it, for I see it will put you in a Passion: But why should you be in a Passion with me?

Fa. Not in a Passion! who can but be in a Passion with all of you! Chang'd her Mind, say you! Ay, and I'll change my Mind too; I'll never-give her a Groat, no not a Shilling to any other Man, that I'll promise her.

Da. I dare fay, Sir, the has no other Man in her View.

Fa. What does she mean then! is she mad! to ruin herself thus, and stand in her own Light? Does she ever expect to have such another Offer?

Da. No, I believe not, Sir; nor does she desire it.

Fa. No, nor never shall; I'll marry again, as old as I am, and give away what I have to Strangers, before I'll give it to Children that shall treat me thus.

Da. Will you punish, Sir, the innocent with the guilty?

Fa. Why you are all guilty, for aught I know: what do you come with such a Story for? where is she? call her down.

Da. Sir, she is very much indisposed; if you would please to let her alone till To-morrow, she may be better able to speak for herself, and you may not be so much in a Passion with her.

Fa. Well, let her alone till Morning, then; I suppose

she'll change her Mind again by that Time.

-

y

t-

is

ıg

ne

be

wn-

d

Da. I am forry, Sir, to see you take it so ill of her; but I dare say she will be the same To-morrow, and as long as she lives.

Fa. Well, then I'll be of the same Mind too To-morrow.

The eldest Sister went up, after Supper, to her Sister's Chamber, who waited for her impatient enough. As soon as she came, she gave her Sister an Account of what Discourse she had had with her Father, and how angry he was; which, though it terrified and afflicted her very much, yet it did not move her at all to alter her Resolutions; and she endeavoured, as well as she could, to fur-

B 3

nish

nish herself with Answers to give her Father when he should begin with her. But whether it was, that her Father was impatient to hear what she had to say, or that she believing he would not meddle with it till Morning, came unwarily in his Way, is not material; but happening to see her the same Night, he call'd her in to him, and told her he wanted to speak with her.

He began very mildly with her, which a little encouraged her; for she was something surprized at his beginning to talk before she expected it: And taking her by the Arm, seels for her Pulse. What's the Matter with you, Child? says her Father; they told me you wasn't

well; I think your Pulse beats very true.

Da. I am better, Sir, now; but I was very much out of Order.

Fa. Only a little in Love, my Dear; that's all I hope. Da. No indeed, Sir; the contrary to an Extreme, as

I suppose my Sister has told you.

Fa. Your Sister, Child! I can lay no Stress on any Thing she said; I cannot tell whether she was in Jest or in Earnest.

Da. Sir, I am very forry, that what she said is disobliging, and more, that it should put you into a Passion: I hope, when you consider of it, you will be of the same

Mind with me.

Fa. What do you mean, Child, by the same Mind; I have recommended a Gentleman to you, whom you can have no Objection against, and his Estate is double to what you can expect: You told me yourself that you had no Objection against his Person, and he has made you his Choice, and is in Love with you above all your Sisters; what can you desire more?

Dd. All that you say, Sir, is true; and for his Person, and Estate, they are both better than I ought to expect.

But----

Fa. But what? Prithee. Child, don't bring any of your canting Scruples to me, I'll hear none of your Bus---

Da. It was my Fear that you would be in a Passion. Sir, and would not hear me. [She cries.

Fa. What Father can bear to be fo treated, and not be

in a Passion? What would you have me hear?

Da. Sir, I would have you hear the Reasons why I

cannot comply.

Fa. It is enough to me to hear you cannot: The Reafons I have for the Match are good; you acknowledge the Gentleman is agreeable, you cannot fay that you cannot love him, and I am fure then you cannot give a good Reason against it; and therefore I expect you go on with it: I have appointed the Week after next for your Wedding; and here, there's some Money to buy you Clothes.

[Holds out a Bank Bill to ber.

Da. Sir, I beg you will not take it ill, that I cannot

fa. What do you mean? I advise you not to play the

Fool with me any longer*.

Da. Sir, this seems to be a Hardship that never was put upon any one before: If I was going to marry any one you did not like, it was no doubt in your Power to command me not to do it; but I cannot think you ought to command me to marry any Man against my Will.

Fa. I have a great many Reasons, why I ought to expect your Compliance in this, and you know my Reasons

are good.

ut

e.

as

ny

or

if-

n:

ne

I

an

nat

no

his

rs;

on,

ect.

pur

Da. You cannot then but think, Sir, that I have some Reasons against it, or I should comply with my Father; for I never disobeyed you before, and why should not my Reasons be heard?

Fa. I know you can have no Reasons that are sufficient. Da. Will you please to let any one else be Judge of

that for me?

* Here the Father being in a great Passion, her Sister, who was in Pain for her, hearing him loud, came in, which greatly encouraged her; and she spoke, though very respectfully, to her Father, yet with great Plainness.

B 4

Fa.

Fa. I will have no Arbitrators between me and my Children.

Da. I cannot help myself in that.

Fa. My Dispute with you is short: Will you have this Gentleman, or no?

Da. If it was not to my Father, I should give a different Answer; but I desire to say nothing that may dis-

please you.

Fa. I can't be displeased with Words so much as I am by Actions: The Gentleman has made his Way through every Thing, made Proposals too great for any Father to resuse; you have entertained him, shewed him a great deal of Respect, and now to treat him thus, and treat your Father thus, 'tis intolerable.

Da. When the Gentleman and you treated of this Matter, it was without me; I had no Knowledge of it, nei-

ther was it my Part to be concern'd.

Fa. Well, I know that.

Da. After you were agreed, you bring him to me: I suppose this to be, that I might converse with him, and see if I liked to make him my Choice: If this was not the Case, you might as well, by your Command, have ordered me to marry him the first Day, as now.

Fa. Well, what do you make of all this?

agreeable in him, and shewed him as much Respect as was my Part; I hope I have not shewed him more than became me.

Fa. Yes, truly, if you resolve not to have him.

Da. Let him reproach me with that if he can.

Fa. Why should you have entertained him at all, if you resolved not to have him?

pa. I did not for some Time resolve not to have him, rill I discover'd him farther; and it was your Command that put me first upon the Trial, and my Reasons now argainst it are good, if you please to hear them patiently: But I'll rather bear all you please to lay on me, than put

you into Passions at me.

Fa.

Fa. I desire no Reasons nor no Discourse; answer me the Question in short, whether you will have him or no! It will raise my Passion less than your impertinent Reasons.

Da. If it must be so, Sir, without hearing any Reasons, then my Answer is, No, never-while I live; and I leave my Reasons for it to him that judges righteous Judgment.

Fa. Then from this Time forward you are no Relati-

on of mine, any more than my Cook-maid.*

Eld. Da. Dear Father, do not fay fo.

Fa. Nay, 'tis no Matter whether the heard me or no?

I'll keep my Promise with her.

Eld. Da. I hope you won't, Sir; it may be my Sister may be better advised, or you may be farther satisfied of her Reasons.

Fa. I know her Reasons well enough; he is not Hypocrite enough for her, I suppose; if a fawning smoothtongu'd Fellow would come and talk Scripture to her, she would take him presently; she does not know what Religion is.

Eld. Da. Sir, if that were true, she would have stronger Reasons for desiring a religious Husband than she may have now, that she might have a kind Instructor to assist her. We have all need of Helps that Way at least; we need no prophane Husbands to keep us back; a soose ir-

religious Husband is a dreadful Snare.

This was a Night of Passion, and little was done all the Evening by the Father but to make Work for Repentance. He was so provoked at his Daughter, that he made terrible Resolutions against her, that he would never give her a Farthing; that he would turn her out of Doors; that she should go to Service; that he would make his Will, and whatever he left to the rest of his Children, it should be upon Condition, that they should never relieve her, nor own her, nor call her Sitter; and that if they did, what they had should go to his eldest Son, and the like.

The young Lady was too full to say any more, and went out of the Room while he was speaking.

He was fo disturbed, that he got but little Sleep all Night, and in the Morning he was obliged to go out of Town early to his Sifter's, about 40 miles off, whose Husband was just dead; so that he did not see his youngest Daugther any more before he went; but just as he was stepping into his Chariot, he called his eldest Daugther to him, "What, (fays he,) Child, is to be done in the Affair " while I am gone? She won't be fo rude to turn him off " while I am away, will she"? Indeed, Sir, (fays the " Daughter,) I am perplex'd about it; I know not how " it will be manag'd, but I believe the will fee him no " more". ' Not see him! (says the Father,) that's the un-" mannerlieft Thing in the World: Sure the won't be fo "rude to me; she might give me the Opportunity to put " an End to it handsomely. Pray tell her, I expect it; " and I affure you, if the refutes to fee him till my Re-" turn, I'll never fee her more as long as I live."

In this Temper the Father went away: The eldest Daughter, poor Lady, had her Heart full with such a message, and scarce knew how to deliver it; however, upon talking farther with her Sister the same Morning, and finding her inflexible, and perhaps more stiff than the thought she needed to be, she did at last deliver it; their Dialogue

was short but effectual, as follows:

Eld. Sif. Dear Sifter, what will you do in this Matter? My Father is gone.

To, Sift. What can I do? I think my Father is very un-

kind to me.

Eld. Sift. My Father is passionate, you know.

Yo. Sift. But not to hear me, not to ask my Reason, this is very hard! Do any Fathers marry their Daughters by Force?

Eld. Sift. Why, I'll tell you what my Father fays to that; he fays, he knows your Reasons beforehand, and

he thinks them of no Weight.

Yo Sift. Dear Sifter, do you think them of no Moment? Eld. Sift. It's hard for a Daughter to make herself Iudge

Judge between her Father and the rest of his Children's I am forry you are so hard push'd at.

Yo. Sift. What would you do in my Cafe?

Eld. Sift. Indeed that's hard to fay too; I would act as my Conscience should tell me was my Duty; I confess. there is a powerful Force in a Father's Command.

To Sift. No Father can command counter to God's

Command.

Ill

of

11-

eft

ras to

air

off

he

WO

no ın,

fo

put

it;

Re-

lest

nef-

pon

nd-

ght

gue

ter?

ung

this

ters

s la

and

ent:

felf

Eld.-Sift. That's true, my Dear; but confider, Child, how far God's Commands lies on you here: I know your Text, Be not unequalty yok'd; and I remember my dear Mother's Words, that this cannot be understood of any Thing but a religious Person marrying with a prophane.

Yo. Sift. Well Sifter; and you remember the Charge she gave us, and the promise we made her: I look upon these Things to be very binding in themselves, and very facred

Engagements.

Eld. Sift. They are binding indeed to what is our Duty at the same Time, and they add Force to it, otherwise

the Case would differ.

Yo. Sift. Just so I understand it; and I am sure, Reafon, Experience, and the Nature of the Thing join with it: What a wretched House must there be, whether it be the Man or the Woman's Case, where one is a Christian, and t'other an Infidel; one devout, the other prophane; one pious and religious, and the other knowing or valuing nothing that is serious? What Helps to Heaven are such to one another! For my Part, I need no wicked Discouragements to pull me back in my Duty, no ill Examples to allure me to Folly; I want all the Affiltance possible the other Way.

Eld. Sift. You preach like an Oracle, Child; I cannot oppose one Word you say: But what must you do? You

heard what sad rash Resolutions my Father made.

Yo. Sift. No, I did not hear them; and I am glad I did not; but, as I am fure I am right, I must do my Duty, and trust Providence; if my Father does not do the

Duty

Duty of his Relation to me, I'll pray to God to forgive him.

Eld. Sift, Well, but what will you do with Mr_?
Yo. Sift. I have no Thought about him now; I am
pretty well over it.

Eld. Sift. But you must not be rude to him, even

upon my Father's account.

Yo. Sift. Nay I would not be rude to him for his own Sake, for I have no Quarrel at him.

Eld. Sift. How will you avoid it, if you do not fee him? Yo. Sift. See him! I would not venture to fee him upon any Account.

Eld. Sift. Child, what do you call venture! you are

undone, if you don't fee him.

Yo. Sift. I dare not trust myself to see him: I am pretty well over it now, but if I see him again, I know not what Instuence my own Weakness may have upon my Resolution; for I must own to you, Sister, I have no Aversion to him.

Eld. Sist. You might as well say you own you love him, Yo. Sist. Well, if I should own it, perhaps it might bear being called so; is it not better then, that I should avoid

the Struggle between Conscience and Affection?

Eld. Sist. But I have a strong Fancy, that you ought to enter into a closer Discourse with him upon this Matter: I think you do not do either him or yourself Justice else; for first, perhaps, you may find, that though he talk'd loosely then, when he did not know, perhaps, whether we were in Jest or in Earnest, yet if you talk'd seriously with him of the main Point yourself (for you know our Discourse was at a Distance, and was rather a kind of civil Raislery than Argument) you may find one of these two Things will happen, viz. either he will talk seriously, and let you see, that he has a Bottom of religious good Sentiments, which is all you ought to insist upon, and would be a happy Discovery on your Side, or talk prophanely, and be self-convicted.

h

te

h

ci

y

fa

pl

te

čli

an

W

no

tr

ed

no

nig

Ic

To Sift. There is more Weight in this, than in all you

have faid yet; but I can never do it.

Eld. Sist. Well; let me add to it, what I was loth to tell you, and that is, what my Father said just now f when he went away:

Yo. Sift. My Father uses me very hardly.

Eld Sift. I am forry for it; but it is in no-body's Power to help it; he would be the same to any of us.

To. Sift. What would you advise me to do then?

Eld. Sift. Truly, if I might advise you, I would have you see him once more.

Yo. Sift. To what Purpose?

Eld. Sift. Why, if it be only to try, whether what he faid before was in Jest, or in Earnest.

To. Sip. I think the Discovery is not worth the Com-

plement.

76

m

en

vn

n?

p-

re

et-

ny

no

m,

ar

oid

ht

at-

ice

he

ne-

fe-

ow

ind

of

fe-

ous

nd oEld. Sift. Really, I can't fay that. Would you be contented to have it true, that he is a fober and religious inclin'd Gentleman?

To Sift. Yes, with all my Heart.

Eld. Sist. Is not an Estate of near 2000s. a Year, and an agreeable Gentleman, very suitable, when 'tis joined with a good Christian?

To. Sift. I allow it all.

Eld. Sift. Well; and you have really not made Trial e-nough, to resolve whether it be so or not?

To. Sift. So you would have me fee him once more, to

try if I can persuade myself to be cheated?

ed! No, far be it from me! but I would have you leave no Room to blame yourfelf hereafter.

ro. Sist. You almost persuade me to let him come Tonight; but if he does, I shall be very ill natur'd to him:

I question whether I shall be civil to him, or no.

Eld. Sift. That is not my Proposal; you may do it, and

† Se tells her Father's Words, which staggers her Resolution.

which Way it will; and I wish you would try.

To. Sift. Well, I think, I will venture then.

The End of the First Dialogue.



DIALOGUE II.

HE young Lady having resolved to see her Gentleman once more, at the Persuasion of her Sister, there needed nothing to be done but to fit still till Evening, when he was fure to come. It feems fhe had refolved to fend a Footman to him, to tell him the was gone out of Town for two or three Days, and fo to prevent his coming, till her Father should tell him in general, that it could not be a Match; and to make it good, the had order'd her Father's Coach to be ready to carry her to Hampstead, to an Uncle's House she had there; but on this Occasion she deferr'd it, and in the Evening he came, as usual, to wait on her. It would not perhaps be possible to fer down the Particulars of the Courtship of this Night, there being a great deal of Variety in it, and no-body prefent but themselves; But the best Account we have of it being from her own Mouth, I have fet it down as the related it to her Sifter in the following Dialogue.

As foon as the Gentleman was gone, which, his Entertainment not being much to his Mind, was some Hours sooner than usual, she came directly to her Sister, who was expecting her with the utmost Impatience, tho' she did not look for her so soon as she came neither; the follow-

ing Dialogue will give an Idea of the Whole.

As foon as the came to her Sifter, the prevented her thus.

m th

a (

of

ful

thi

fol

ped

you

ber

it f

Pol

he

and

you

1 aff

30

1/

Well, Sifter, you have a nice Guess with you; 'tis all as you faid, and the Business is now all done and over.

if sife. Well, before I enter into Particulars, are you

pleased and satisfied?

3d Sift. Perfectly fatisfied and pleafed.

is Sist. Are you pleased that you have seen him?

ad Sift. Thoroughly pleafed: I would not but have feen him again for any Good.

if Sifi Is it as you expected?

3d Sift. Ay, ay, just as I expected; a true Gentleman, rerfectly educated, politely bred; that knows about as much of Religion as a Parjon's Horje, that is to fay, knows the Way to the Church-Door, but scorns to debauch his Breeding with fuch a clumfy Thing as Religion; is more a Gentleman, than to trouble himself with the Meanness of Religion, and not Hypocrite enough to pretend to the fublimer Parts of it; one that has not been long enough in this World to think of the next, nor is yet come to any Refolution about when he shall.

ift Sift. I am forry for it; I affure you it is not as I ex-

pected.

e-

er,

ıg,

to

of

m-

t it

01-

to

on

me,

ble

tht,

ore-

of it

re-

ter-

ours

who

did

oW-

ius.

3d Sift. But it is as I expected, I affure you.

ift Sift. Well, but tho' it is, I believe you are not forry you met him.

3d Sift. No, no, not at all, I affure you: I am much the better satisfied that I have now the open Declarations of it from his own Month.

ist Sist. You surprize me; I thought he had had more

Policy than fo.

3d Sist. I affure you, as I told you, he is no Hypocrite; he is not ashamed to be believed to be full as bad as he is, and made no Doubt but I would like him the better for it.

ift Sift. That's hard another Way; he could not think

you were to too, fure.

3d Sist. Why he does not think he does any thing amis, lassure you; and takes it ill to be thought miltaken.

ist Sist. I can scarce form all this in my Mind; I wish

you would tell me some of the History of this Night's Sa-Intation, now 'time fresh in your Thoughts.

3d Sift. With all my Heart; but it will be a long Story. 1/1 Sift. No Matter for that; it will be the more pro-

fitable, and, I dare fay, not the less diverting.

ad Sift. Why after we had been together about half an Hour, he seemed to recollect himself, and told me he asked my Pardon that he had not condoled with me for the Loss of my Uncle Sir James ---- : I told him. he need not; for the Loss was not so great. He replied, he thought I appeared very much concerned at it last Night, which made him withdraw sooner than he intended. I told him I was thoughtful indeed, but not fo much about that: for though I believed my Aunt was very forry for his Death, yet I thought she had no great Reason; for I was fure she lived a very uncomfortable Life with him. He wanted then very much to know, what I was fo thoughtful about, if I was not troubled at the Lofs of my Uncle: I declined telling him, but did it in a Way that I intended should prompt his Cutiosity; for I desired nothing more than to have a fair Opportunity to tell him very plainly what troubled me; and he foon gave it me. He told me, he took himself to be so much interested in me now, as to be concerned in all my Griefs; and he claimed to know if any Thing afflicted me, that he might bear his Share in it; and added fomething so handsome and so obliging on that Head, that I must acknowledge it shook my Resolution very much; and I had almost given over my Delign; but I recovered myself again in a Moment or two.

1/1 Sift. Indeed you are a resolute Girl: I think what

bi

m

a S

of

you repeat of him was engaging.

3d Sist. I told him, it was natural for People to make fudden Transitions, from other People's Case to their own, and that indeed that was the Occasion that made me so uneasy: I knew my Aunt was a Lady of great Piety and Virtue, that every one knew to be exceeding religious and serious: That on the other Hand, Sir James was a mad, frolicksome, merry Fellow, that neither understood

derstood any Religion, or troubled himself about it, but would play a thousand mad Tricks with her, because of her strict Observation of religious Things; and that this gave her a constant Uneasiness. He smiled, and said, He hoped I was not asraid of him on that Score; for, Madam, says he. though I pretend to no Religion myself, I cannot but respect them that do. This was the first, and I think a considerable Consirmation of what we had said before; was it not, Sister?

ever, there was one Thing that I observe to be a good Foundation for Religion, viz. That he respected them

that were religious.

3d Sift. Ay Sister; but we did not end here: I told him I was very forry to hear him fay he had no Religion himself; because, as perhaps I had not a great deal, to marry a Man that had none, would endanger my losing what I had, and I should rather have a Husband to help me on towards Heaven, than pull me back.

1st Sift. What could he fay to that?

3d Sift. He told me, he did not doubt but I would go to Heaven without his Help; he said jestingly, it was a Road he had never travelled; but I might be affured, he would not willingly pull me back, if he did not help me on.

ist Sist. Well there was something very honest in that

too.

n

IS

1-

.

è

re

ly

e,

as

W

in

on

11-

n;

at

ke

eir

me

ety

91-

nes in3d Sist. That's true, Sister; but negative Religion is but a poor Stock to begin on.

1st Sist. But 'tis better than a Despiser of Religion: You ought to have acknowledged what Good you found.

3d Sift. My Defigus lay another Way; I aimed at a fuller Discovery, and I soon had it.

If Sift. Well go on then.

my Aunt; how he got a Book of Devotion out of her Closet once, and got a long printed Story about ducking a Scold pasted into it; and another Time got the Ballad of Chevy Chace bound into her Psalm-Book; how when he knew

knew she was in her Closet at her Devotion, he would bring his Huntsman to feed the Hounds just under her Window; and how one Time he made a Fellow ery Fire, and the like; as you know, Sister, he played many such Pranks, and would do any Thing to put her Thoughts into Disorder. He told me, tho' he was but a young Fellow, and had not troubled his Thoughts much about Rehgion, (there was another Stab to my affections, Sister) yet he said he could not bear to make a Jest of it neither.

1/1 Silt. Well, but that was another Word in his Fa-

vour too.

3d Sift. I replied, I was very forry to hear him own, that he had not troubled his Thoughts about Religion, and asked him upon what Foundation he could think of setting up a Family, if that was his Case? He told me he kept a Chaplain, and jestingly told me, he was devout enough for all the rest of the House. I grew chagrin and dull; I told him that these Things had filled me with very sad Thoughts about Marrying, and it looked very dismal to me; but all I could say, could not bring him to believe I was in earnest.

1/2 Sist. I believe, he is really very good humoured.

3d Sist. Ay, Sister, that's true; but I look for something farther in a Husband, or I am resolved I'll have no Husband at all.

1st Sist. Well, but pray go on with your Story; what

Answer did he make?

3d Sist He laughed at me, and told me he believed marrying would make him mighty religious; that he would chuse a Wife first, and then choose his Religion.

1st Sift. The Man was mad, sure, to open himself so

fully.

3d Sift. I appeared then really disturbed; and, whether he perceived it or no, I am sure the Tears stood in my eyes: However, I struggled with my Disorder, and told him I was very sorry then that it was his Missortune to begin with one that could not be content to marry upon those Terms; and hoped, when he was fully satisfied

of the Reason of such a Resolution in me, he would not take it ill. that I would stay for him, till he had resolved more seriously upon a Thing of so much more Importance.

1/t Sift. That was very cunningly answer'd.

3d sift. Then he began to think I was in earnest, and told me, he hoped I would not talk so, because it might be longer than he desired to be without me.

ift sift. That was still making the Case worse, for it was as much as to say, he neither had any Religion, nor

intended to have any.

t

d

o

in

d

10

04

d

3d Sist. I did not fail to take it so, and told bim, the longer he was without me, it might be the better for him; but the longer he was without Religion, I was sure would be the worse for him; and that I wonder'd, how a Man of his Sense could talk so. He reply'd, he had rather talk of any thing else, for he found this Discourse did not please me; I told bim, he mistook me very much; for tho' I confess'd it did not please me to find him to be what I hoped he was not, that is, a Person who pretended to no Religion; yet it pleased me very well that he had been so just to himself, as to let me know it, before any Engagements had pass'd between us.

1st Sist. If I had not known that my Sister was never courted before, I should have thought you had pass'd a

great many fuch Encounters as these.

3d Sist. You know 'tis all new to me; but, however, I knew the Thing was for my Life, and that I must speak now or never; and I was resolved to put an End to it.

If Sift. I must own, you were in the right, tho' I am

persuaded I could not have said half so much.

3d Sift. Why you ha'n't heard half of it yet: I made him angry, ferious, laugh, and, I think verily, once I made him almost cry.

1st Sift. I am forry I interrupted you; Pray go on

thea: What faid he next?

3d Sist. He said, he wonder'd I could say that no Engagments were between us; he said, he was so engaged

C 2

to me as he could never go back. I answer'd, that as his Engagements were from himself, so they were best known to himself; but that he knew very well I was under none to him. He smiled then, and said, he hoped I was. I answer'd, I had not profes'd to be engag'd; I told him, I would not deny that I had Respect enough for him to have gone farther, had not such Difficulties appeard as I could never get over, and had he been the Person he was represented; but that, as it was, I had too much Respect for myself to ruin my myself with my Eyes open, and too

much Respect for him to keep him in Suspence.

1/1 Sift. Would he not take that for being in earnest? ad Sist. Yes, he shewed me then that he took me to be in earnest, and shewed me that he was in earnest too; for he appear'd warm, and a little angry: He told me, he was very forry to be charged with deceiving me; and ask'd if ever he had faid any thing of himfelf which was not true? For, Madam, says he, If I am not the Person I appeared to be, I must have deceived you in something; pray what sort of a Person did you take me for? I reply'd, as warm as be; that I wonder'd he should mistake me so much; that I thought he did not do me justice; that I had said indeed he was not the Person he had been represented but never faid, that be had represented himself one Way or other. Then he begg'd my Pardon again, and told me, he had taken me wrong; that whatever came of it, he would never deceive me; I should know the worst of him, whether I would have him or no. Indeed Sir, faid I, I am perfuaded you are no Hypocrite. I understand you, faid he, you think I have used more Honesty than Discreti-No, Sir, faid I, I very much approve your Honesty, and do not blame your Discretion at all. But I do, faid he, for I find, if I could have counterfeited more ferious Things than I am Master of, and seigned myself a little religious, all had been well. I told him I would not fay, that it was not in his Power to have deceived me; but I I hop'd he had acted a Part much more like a Gentleman. He reply'd, that was hard then, I should make so unkind a Return

Return to him, as to make him lose his Mistress for his Honesty,

1st Sist. Why really, Sister, so it was.

3d Sift. I told him I thought the best Return was to treat him with the same Sincerity, and that was the Reafon of the Freedom I took; that as he told me plainly what he was, I must tell him plainly, I could not think of engaging with him any farther, till he had thought a little of those Things, which alone could make it reasonable for him to think of marrying. He would fain have turned it off to a Jest; he laugh'd at me, he banter'd me, he ask'd me how long I would stay for him? I told him I was in no Haste. He asked me, how long I thought I might stay before I got a Saint to my Mind, as the World went now? I told bim, I was but an ill Judge of Saints, and might be cheated, as wifer than I had been; but that, as I faid before, I would not fall into the Pit with my Eyes open. He told me abruptly, he wish'd I had never feen him. At that Word, I confess, I was a little alarm'd; however I made no Answer, but look'd full in his Face. I faw he was concern'd, and, as I thought, in a Kind of a Passion. When he found I look'd at him, he repeated the Words thus, I wish with all my Heart you had never seen me. I answer'd nothing. He added, he wish'd be bad known my Mind fooner. I still faid nothing. Then he flung himself into my Arms, and hung about me: My Dear, fays he, with an inexpressible Tenderness, wby are you filent! Because, says I, I would not give you an Answer. in Kind to any I bing that is disobliging; he return'd, it was impossible for him to fay or do any Thing disobliging to me; that it was true, he wish'd I had never seen bim, and that he had known my Mind Sooner; but it was, that he might have disguised himself better, and not have lost me for his being so foolishly honest. Why, said I, would you have endeavoured to have cheated me? Ay, certainly, faid he, rather than lose you; and would have done it effectually too. Why, what would you have done? faid I. Done! replied he, I would have been the soberest gravest young Fellow that ever you saw in your Life. And do you think yourself Hypocrite enough, said I, to have concealed yourself effectually? Why not? said he: Perhaps you think I am too much a Fool for it. No, Sir, said I, I think you are too honest for it; and, of the two, 'tis much the better on your Side.

1st Sift. This was a Kind of Turn and Return between

Test and Earnest: But how did it end?

3d Sift. Why, he carried it on thus a long Time, 'till he put an odd Case to me, which made me put a short End to the Discourse: We were speaking of Fortunes, and the Grandeur of Families; at last we came to speak of the young Duke of ---- "Why now (fays he) if his Grace " should come and court you with the State and Gran-" deur of his Quality, the Title of a Dutchess, &c. you " would not turn short upon him, as you did upon me, " and fay, My Lord Duke, pray what Religion are you " of? And yet he has no more Religion than I." I told him, I thought he did not treat me fairly; that it was faying nothing at all, to fay I would not have this Man, or that Man, who never made any Pretensions to me; it was enough to me, that I would let him know, I would refuse all the Men in the World, that should ever come to me, unless I found a Reverence of God, a Sense of Religion, and a Profession at least of the Duty we all owe to our Maker, had made some Impressions on them; That I might be deceived indeed with an Hypocrite, for it was not in me to judge of the Heart, and as the World was now stated, it was but too probable I should; but then it should be my Misery, not my Fault; and that since he feemed to infinuate, that I did not act in that Affair with Sincerity, I had no better Specimen of my Resolution than this, that though I was very forry to treat him fo, who, I was fatisfied, had a Respect for me; and whose Respect I acknowledged was not disagreeable, and whose Estate and Proposals were very much better than I had Reason to expect; yet that upon this one fingle Account, I affured him, I neither could nor would ever discourse more

more with him on this Affair; and hoped he would not take it ill, that I was forced to be so plain with him before I could persuade him I was in earnest: And having said all this, I offered to rise and retire, but he held me fast in his Arms, and would not let me stir.

1/ Sift Cruel Wretch! how could you talk fo to him?

How did he look?

t

S

h

0,

le le d

3d Sift. Look! I confess, Sister, his Looks moved me more than all the Words he could have faid in half a Year. and I shall never forgot them; he seemed strangely affected, and once or twice I faw Tears in his Eyes; but he turned his Head away, and recovered himself, and embarked me in another Discourse, in Spight of all I had faid. Hold, fays he, you have broke one positive Promise you made me already. I told him, I did not remember that I had ever made him any Promise at all. Yes, says he, you told me just now you would stay for me, till I had made a Choice in Matters of Religion. I told him I had not broke that Promise yet. Yes, he faid, I had, in saying I would never discourse more with him on this Affair. I replied then, that I would except that Circumstance, tho' I thought he need not infift on it for several Reasons: First, Because he might find so many young Ladies abroad. who would not trouble their Heads to make the Objection I had done, and that there was no Occasion for him to turn religious for a Wife. Secondly, Because there was no Appearance of his returning upon those Terms. He faid, that was more than I knew, "But pray, Madam (faid "he) why do you lay fuch a mighty Stress upon this Par-"ticular? Religion is an entire Article by itself; my be-"ing religious or not religious need not obstruct our Af-"fection to one another; I am no Enemy to Religion." I answered, that it was indeed an acceptable Thing, as Times went now, not to find Gentlemen Despifers and Haters of Religion, and of all that favoured it; but that I was affured, where there was not a Profession of Religion, and where God was not acknowledged, there could be no Bleffing expected; and that I should think I had renounced

renounced God, and declared War against Heaven, if I should marry a Man that openly acknowledged he had no Religion. He told me he was forry to see me run Things to such an Extremity; that he did not think I had been in earnest, when he in Jest said, he had not thought of Religion; that he would not urge me in a Thing which I laid so much Stress upon, but would wait on me again, and hoped to find me in another Mind, and to let me know he was not quite so bad as I thought him to be. And thus we broke up.

1st Sist. What, did he go away angry?

3d Sist. Truly, I cannot say how he was; he seemed disturbed and uneasy, and went away willinger than I expected.

ist Sist Ay, ay, and willinger than you defired too; I

can perceive it, Sifter, well enough.

a Sist. Why, I cannot deny but I have acted all this by a Force upon my Affection: But I should have been undone; I should never have had any Peace, or expected any Blessing in the Match; for as a religious Life is the only Heaven upon Earth, if it please God to support my Resolution, I'll never sell the Prospect of it for an Estate, or for the most agreeable Person alive.

1st Sist. 'Tis nobly resolved, Sister! I hope you will be supported in so just a Resolution: But do you think he

will come no more?

3d Sift. I hope not; but if he does, I resolve not to see him, if I can avoid it.

We must now leave the two Sisters a while, and follow the young Gentleman a little; for his Story does not end so. He went away very much concerned, as above, and particularly it touch'd him very sensibly, that he should be taken for such a Creature, that a sober, virtuous Lady (for such he was sure his Mistress was) should refuse him merely on Account of his wicked Character; and that the she acknowledged she had a Respect for him, she was obliged to shun him, purely because she was afraid of him,

CI

d

11.

E

N

in

th

fh

R

re

no

W

Y

B

W

de

fir

W

be

ha U

his

lar

E

he

M

NO

lec

as a Hater of Religion, and therefore dangerous to live with. It had run often in his Mind, that she had said she could expect no Blessing with him; and that if she married him she should think she had renounced God, and declared War against Heaven; so that to be sure I am a dreadful Fellow, says he, that she dares not take me; lest she should appear to be a Confederate with one of God's Enemies.

It then occurred to him, that it really was no otherwife in Fact; that the was in the right in it all; that he had in Truth no Religion, or Sense of God, upon his Mind, nor had ever entertained any Notions of Religion in his Thoughts, and had told her fo himself; and that therefore the young Lady was in the right of it, and if the had any Fund of Religion herfelf, had a great deal of Reason to refuse him; that every sober Woman ought to refuse him upon the same Account; and that she that did not, was not fit to make him a Wife, or at least such a Wife as he could expect any Happiness from; that this young Lady had made a true Judgment, and it was his Business not to think of persuading her to alter her Mind, which in fort must leffen his Opinion of her, but to consider what State and Condition he was in, and what was his first Business to do, to deliver himself out of it, before he went to her any more.

He grew uneasy upon this Subject for some Time, and being perfectly ignorant of every Thing called Duty, having had an Education wholly void of Instruction, that Uneasiness increased; and not knowing which Way to cast his Thoughts for immediate Direction, he grew very melancholy and dejected: He loved this young Woman to an Extreme, and that Affection was infinitely increased by her Conduct in this Affair, and by the extraordinary Manner of her refusing him: But the Reproaches of his Heart, as being such a Monster, that a Woman that even own'd she lov'd him durst not join herself to him, doub-

He could not think of coming to her again, for he confessed

fessed the Reasons which she gave for her not daring to take him were so just, and she had argued them so well, that if she should abate any Thing of them, he should not have so much Esteem for her as he had before; and yet he saw, that if she did not, he could never expect to have her; and yet also he could not bear the Thoughts of not

having her, for all that.

He lived in this uneasy Condition some Months; his Friends perceiving him to be very melancholy, tried many Ways to divert him, but none reach'd his Case, or if they did, they understood not how to advise him; for his Relations were most like himself, People of Levity and Gallantry, being rich and gay; a Family that dealt very little in Matters of Religion: He had an Aunt, his Mother's Sifter, who feemed very much concerned about it; but as the thought all that ailed him was his being cros'd in his Affection, the worked her Thoughts about; Night and Day, to find out a Wife for him, and so to take his Thoughts off, and turn them another Way: At length the found out a young Lady in the City, of a very great Fortune; for the had near 20,000 l. to her Portion, and The plied it so warmly with him, that he consented to treat of it with her Friends, and his Circumstances being such as few Fortunes would refuse, he found his Way clear enough, and so went to visit the young Lady.

It was an odd Kind of Courtship, you may be sure, and he went about it accordingly; for, as he confessed afterwards, he resolved, before he saw her, not to like her, or any Thing she said or did; no, nor ever to be in earnest with her upon the Thing; but only to jest with and banter her; and he told his Aunt so before-hand. However, his Aunt would not take him at his Word, but would have him wait upon her, and so he did; but he needed not to have taken up any Resolutions in the Case, for he was spoiled for Courtship already, at least for most of the Ladies of the Times; he had no Relish in any of their Conversation; it was like Music for one that had no Ear; all the Gaiety and Flutter about them was less up-

OU

R

fu

ou

fai

to

and

tal

ma

en

tin

ma

can

. V

6

he

fon

the

Wit

W

ver

0,

tho

the

refe

mig

We

this

fhe,

am

abo

as .

bour

lain

it of

tern

look

on him; his first Mistress had treated him with such solid Reasoning, such serious Talk, and had handled him after such a Manner, that in short nothing but what was serious had now any Relish with him; however, as I bave said, he resolved to put a Force upon himself so far, as to go and see what Kind of Thing his new Mistress was;

and accordingly he did go, as above.

d

is

h

it

d

at

C#

ıd

70

г,

r-

pa

W+

ut

he

le,

oft

at

no

p-

But when he had been one Evening there, and had talk'd a little with her, he foon faw he had no Need of making Resolutions; that he was in no Danger of being enfoared by her; the Levity of her Behaviour, the Emptiness of her Discourse, the Weakness of her Conduct, made him fick of her the very first Time; and when he came away, he faid to himself, 'Is it possible for any ' Man in his Senses to bear this Shittlecock, that had but been one half Hour with my other Mistres! And away he came, not pleased at all. However he went again for fome Time, till at last, not finding Things mend, but rather grow worse, he was resolved he would talk a little with her about Religion; and as he asked her one Night, What Religion the was of? She answered him just in the very Words that he had banter'd his other Miltress with ; O, fays she, I am a mighty good Christian. I believe so, thought be, just such another as I was, when I was asked the same Question. However, he conceal'd his Thoughts. resolv'd to carry it on a little farther, and gave her a mighty civil Answer; I don't doubt that, Madam, says he. Well, fays the then, what would you have more? Nay, nothing, Madam, returned he, I was only in Jeft. O, fays the, you want to know what Opinion I am of! You fee I am no Quaker. No, fays he, Madam, I am not concern'd about your Opinion; you may easily have as much Resigion as I. Nay, fays the, I ba'n't troubted my Head much about it; I don't know what I may do when I keep a Chaplain. He had enough of that Discourse, and so he turn'd it off to something else; for though it was almost the Pattern of what he had done with his first Mistress, yet it looked with fuch a different Face to him now, that, as be

faid afterwards, it made his very Blood run cold within him; and fill'd him with Horror at his own Picture, which, he thought, now was fet before his Eyes in all its just Deformities. When he came away from her, he said to himself, 'Well, now I see the true Force of what that dear Creature argued for herself against me, that to venture upon me, while I declared against Religion, was to run herself into the Pit with her Eyes open, and ruin herself by mere premeditated Choice: It would be just so with me in this Case, if I should marry this Buttershy, we should even go Hand in Hand very lovingly to the Devil. This will not do my Business! So he put an End to that Affair as soon as he could, and resolved to see her no more.

All this while he had no Affistance from either Books, Friends, Ministers, or any Body, only the just and natural Reflexion of his own Reason: But as he was a Gentleman of polite Manners, and bred to Conversation with Gentlemen of the best Quality, as well as of the best Parts, so the Government of himself was the more easy, and he restrained the Dejection of his Spirits from making any extraordinary Discovery of itself, only that he appeared a little more sedate and more thoughtful than before, and was a little more retired in his Way of Living, but not so much but that he came often into public

Company, as before.

It happened one Time, that in promiseuous Converfation at a Chocolate-house near the Court, this Gentleman and seven or eight more being present, the Company sell from talking of News to talking of Religion: The
Discourse began about the Disserence which had happened in France lately, and were then depending between
the Pope and the French Clergy; and of the Sorbonne or
Faculty of Theology, as they are called there, being at
that Time employed in drawing up a new System of Divinity, or Body of Doctrine, as they called it; and as a
Consequence it was hinted, how likely it was, that such
a strict Enquiry made by Men of Learning and Virtue

into

in

la

do

in

T

th

an

fu

be

mu

de

thi in

not

fay

Op

bee

on

mai

Cor

anc

hea

Wo

With

Yes

Ma

fays

flian

jesti

turn

pritt

did .

Plea

migh

ing 1

0

n

0

n

O

3,

u-.

n-

th

est

ſy,

ik-

he

nan

iv-

blic

rer-

tle-

pa-

I he

en•

reen

e or

g at

Di-

as 2

fuch

rtue

into the Fundamentals of Religion, should lead them at last into Protestant Principles, and break that whole Kingdom off from the Errors and Ignorance of Popery, opening the Eyes of the People to Christian Knowledge. There being some sober and sensible Gentlemen there, the Discourse was carried on very gravely and judiciously, and the whole Company seemed to receive it with Pleafure; when a Couple of young Beaus, who happened to be in the Room, beginning to be tired with a Thing fo much out of their Way, one of them rifes up on a fudden, and fays to the other, Come, Jack, I am tir'd of this dull, religious Stuff; prithee let us go, there's nothing in it. Ay, fays the other, with all my Heart, I know nothing of the Matter: Come, will you go to the Opera? There fat another young Gentleman of their Acquaintance there, and they pull'd him to come with them: No; fays he, I like this Discourse very well, 'tis worth two Operas to me. Why, fays the other, how long have you been in Orders, pray? Is such Stuff as that fit Conversation for Gentlemen? Yes, fays the fober young Gentleman, I think it is; pray, what can there be in religious Conversation that is unfit for a Gentleman? There sat an ancient Nobleman by, talking with a Clergyman, who hearing the young Gentleman's Reply, fell a laughing; for this Discourse put the former Subject to a Stop. On my Word, Gentlemen, fays his Lordship, Mr ----- has met with you: I don't think you can answer his Question. Yes, my Lord, fays the foolish Beau, I think 'tis below a Man of Quality to trouble his Head about it. Pray, Sir, fays the Lord, is it below a Man of Quality to be a Christian? O, my Lord, says the other Beau, bantering and jesting, We are mighty good Christians at the Opera; and turning away to his Comrade, says he, Come, come, Jack, prithee let's go; so they went both out together, for they did not care to engage. Our Gentleman listened with Pleasure to all this Discourse, till he heard that Word, mighty good Christians, and then reflected upon his having used that Expression to his Mistress, and how his last Lady

Lady gave him the same Return; but he thought it was so empty, so absurd a Turn, to a Thing of that Consequence, that he reproach'd himself with having talk'd so soolishly, and was asham'd to think, how like one of these Fops he had appear'd to her; and how he had talk'd after the same senseless Way, which he now look'd upon to be the most empty, scandalous Thing in the World,

When the two young Rakes were gone, the Lord, turning to the young Gentleman that had refused them, complimented him upon his having given them to handsome an Answer, and having run them both a-ground in one Enquiry. ' My Lord, (faid the Gentleman) if my Question 'run them a-ground, your Lordship's Question quite confounded them. Indeed, my Lord, (continued he,) tis too much the Notion now, especially among Perfons of Quality, that 'tis below them to the religious.' My Lord faid. It was fo indeed; but that he would fain ask such People, whether they thought St. Paul was a Gentleman, or no? And whether he did not shew as ' much good Breeding and good Manners, when he appeared before Agrippa, Festus, and the Governor Sergius Paulus, as any Nobleman in Britain could have done at the Bar of the House of Lords?" Upon this Subject his Lordship went on for half an Hour, with a Discourse so handsome, so to the Purpose, and yet so serious, that it highly entertained the Company; shewing how it became every Man of Quality to behave himself in Subjection to the Rules given him by his Maker, as it became every Subject to honour his Governor; how Piery and Religion were the Glory of a Man of Quality, and made Nobility truly illustrious; that it was so far from being true, that Religion was not fuited to the Life of a Gentleman, that it was certain a Man could not truly be a Gentleman without it; that Religion was so far from being a dull flegmatick Thing and useless in Conversation, as was the fashionable Notion of the Town, that really no Man could be fo bright, so perfectly easy, so chearful, so sociable, and so always in Humour for Society as a Christian; that Religi1

a

łi

m

e

it

P

an

th

to

N

he

m

wl

CO

all

wh

by

mo

cle

tiar

loo

a G Th

pea

my

by a

Oa

did dell

ous

the

Vas

fe-

fo efe

af-

rn-

om-

En-

ion

uite

he,)

Per-

ous.'

fain

Was

v as

gius

e at

t his

le lo

at it

came

in to

Sub.

igion

bility

t Re-

nat it

thout

atick

nable

be 10

fo al-

eligi-

on was the Beauty of Conversation, and affished to make it pleafant and agreeable: that without it Company was empty, Discourse unprofitable, Society unpleasant; and, in short, that Conversation, without a Mixture of something regarding Religion, and a due Connexion with it, was like a Dance without Musick, or a Song without Measure; like Poetry without Quantity, or Speech without Grammar: That it was a Mistake to think Christianity receive ed Honour from the Dignity of the Persons who profes'd it; and his Lordship said, he wonder'd to hear Men express themselves so absurdly vain, as to say, such a Man is an Honour to Religion; that the Thing was true only in the Reverse, and it should be said Religion is an Honour to fuch a Person: That it was a Contradiction in the very Nature of the Things, to fay, fuch a Man was noble, great, honourable, or a Gentleman, without Religion; and it might with every lot as much Sense be faid so of a Person who had neither Birth, Family or Manners.

Our Gentleman came home charm'd with this Difcourse, as indeed the whole Company were besides; especially confidering the Authority and Dignity of the Person who spoke it; his Mind was inspired with new Thoughts by it, both of Religion and of himself; he not only saw more of the Excellency of Religion in itself, but began to fee clearly it was the Ornament of a Gentleman to be a Christian: It was with the greatest Contempt, that he now look'd back upon the Notion he had formerly espous'd of a Gentleman's being above troubling himself with serious Things. How fordid and brutish did the two Beaus appear, faid be, compared to that noble and excellent Person, my Lord----! How were they laugh'd at and despis'd by all the Gentlemen in the Company, and look'd upon as Fellows fit for acthing, but in the Highway to Difaster! On the other Hand, it occur'd to him, how handsomely did that young Gentleman answer them? with what Modelly did he speak, and yet boldly, in Defence of a religious Life? and what an Honour was paid him for it by all the Company, and by the Nobleman in particular! and

then

then to think of what that Lord had said, with what Applause it was received; how all the Company listened to his Lordship, as to an oracle; how general a Consent was given to it by all the Gentlemen; and in a Word, how agreeable the Conversation of the Day was, put it all together, and yet, said be, of eleven Gentlemen in the Room, there was not one Man among them, except the Clergyman, who was not above me both in Quality and Estate.

From all this he drew this general and happy Conclusion for himself, viz. That he should never be a compleat Gentleman, till he became a religious Man; and that the more of a Christian he was, the fitter he should be for the Conversation of the best and greatest Men in the Kingdom; and in consequence of this Resolution, he resolved to apply himself seriously to the Study of religious Things.

To avoid the usual Diversions of the Town, while these serious Thoughts were upon him, he resolved to retire into the Country, to a little Seat he had in Hampshire, remote from all Conversation, and where he had nobody to talk to but his own Servants, or some of the Neighbourhood, who were all his Tenants. When he sound himself so persectly alone, it began to be a little too much for him, and he grew very heavy, and a little hypochondriack: his Mind was oppress'd with the Thoughts of his Circumstances, but dark as to the due Enquiries he ought to have made: at length he rous'd himself a little with these Thoughts.

I talk of being religious! and being a Christian! Why, I understand nothing of it, or how to go about it: What is it? What is Religion? And what is it to be a Christian? he puzzl'd himself with the Questions, and knew not what Answer to give himself, when it came thus into his Mind, Did not the first dear Preacher, (meaning the young Lady he had courted) tell me what Religion was? And how he understood it, viz. a Reverence of God, a Sense of his Worship, and Impressions, of Duty to him that made us. This certainly is Religion, and this is to be religious: But

which Way must I go about it?

He

a

n

th

th

th

fo

hi

hi

be

dai

We

the

but

bee

am

Ign

00

IS

e.

Ι,

re

n,

G-

eat

he

he

m;

p-

efe

ire

ire,

ody

gh-

und

uch

OD.

of

he

ittle

hy,

bat

ian?

whit

lind,

Lady

w ha

his

115.

But

He was feriously musing on this Part one Evening, walks ing all alone in a Field near his House, when he began to look with great Concern upon the Want, which he felt, of an early Foundation being laid in his Mind, by a relia gious Education. 'Sure, (faid he to himself,) we that are 'Men of Fortune are the most unhappy Part of Mankind; we are taught nothing: Our ancestors have had so little Notion of Religion themselves, that they never so much as thought of it for their Children: I don't wonder they have thought it below them; for knowing lit-'tle or nothing of it themselves, they had no other Excuse to one another for the leaving their Children en-' tirely destitute of it, but by pretending it was below their 'Quality.' This flung him into a reflexion, which raifed this fudden, passionate Expression, God be merciful unto me! fays, he, What is become of my Father and Grandfather! He went on thus, Who am I! a Gentleman! I am attended by Servants. Sir'd, and Worlhipp'd, and Honour'd, here by a Parcel of poor Workmen and Tenants, that think themselves nothing to me, and are half frighted if they do but fee me; and I am in the Sight of him that made me, and in my own too, a Dog, a Monster, a thousand times worse Creature than the Meanest of them; for I am a Wretch with a Soul, and yet know nothing of him that gave it me; a Soul commanded to ferve and obey the God that made it, and yet never taught to know him.

There lives a poor Ploughman, and yonder lives a poor Farmer; they both fare hard and work hard; how fober, how religious, how ferious are they! how are they daily teaching and instructing their Children! and how were they taught and instructed by their Parents! and there's scarce a Boy of ten Years old in their Families, but knows more of God and Religion than I do: I have been taught nothing, and know nothing but this, that I am under the Curse of Darkness in the midst of Light; Ignorance in the midst of Knowledge; and have more to

D

give an Account of, than a Negro of Afric, or a Savago of America.

He had wander'd so long in these Meditations, not minding his Way, that he found Night coming on, and he fearce knew he was To far from his own House till he look'd about him; then he resolved to go back; so he broke off his Thoughts a while, and made little Haste homeward. In his Way he necessarily went by a poor labouring Man's Door, who, with a Wife and four Children, lived in a small Cottage on the Waste, where he (the Gentleman) was Lord of the Manor; as he pass'd by, he thought he heard the Man's Voice, and stepping up close to the Door, he perceived that the poor good old Man-was praying to God with his Family: As he faid afterwards, his Heart sprung in his Breast for Joy at the Occasion, and he listened eagerly to hear what was faid. The poor Man was, it feems, giving God Thanks for his Condition, and that of his little Family; which he did with great Affection; repeating how comfortably they liv'd, how plentifully they were provided for, how God had diftinguished them in his Goodness, that they were alive, when others were fnatch'd away by Difasters; in Health, when others languish'd with Pain and Sickness; had Food, when others were in Want; at Liberty, when others were in Prison; were cloathed and covered, when others were naked and without Habitation; concluding with admiring and adoring the Wonders of God's Providence and Mercy to them, who had deferved nothing.

He was confounded, and struck, as it were speechles, at the Surprize of what he had beard: Nothing could be more affecting to him; he came away (for he had staid as long as his Heart could hold) and walk'd to some Distance, and there stopt, look'd up, and round him, as he said, to see if he was awake, or if it was a Dream. At last he got some Vent to his Thoughts, and throwing out his Arms, Merciful God! says he, is this to be a Christian! What then have I been all my Days! What's this Man thus thankful for! Why, my Dogs live better than he

I

W

h

th

ta

h

B

does in some Respects, and is he on his Knees adoring infinite Goodness for his Enjoyments! Why I have enjoyed all I have, and never had the least Sense of God's Goodness to me, or ever once said, God, I thank thee for it, in my Life. Well might a fober Woman be afraid of me: Is this humble Temper, this Thankfulness for meer Povertyl Is this the Effect of being a Christian! Why, then Christians are the happiest People in the World! Why, I should hang myself, if I was to be reduced to a Degree of a hundred Times above him; and yet here is Peace, Ease of Mind, Satisfaction in Circumstances, nay Thankfulness, which is the Excess of human Felicity; and all this in a Man that just lives one Degree above starving: We think our Farmers poor Slaves, who labour and drudge in the Earth to Support us that are their Landlords, and who look upon us like their Lords and Masters. Why this poor wretch is but a Drudge to those Drudges, a Slave of Slaves; and yet he gives God Thanks for the Happiness of his Condition! Is this the Frame of religious People: What a Monster am I! Then he walk'd a little Way farther, but not being able to contain his Aftonishment, I'll go back, says be, to poor William; (for he knew his Name) he shall teach me to be a Christian: for I am sure I know nothing of it yet.

Away he goes back to the poor Man's House, and standing without, he whistled first, and then cass'd, William! William! The poor Man, his Family Worship being over, was just going to Supper, but hearing somebody whistle, he thought it might be some Stranger that had lost his Way, as is often the Case in the Country; and went to the Door, where he saw a Gentleman stand at some Distance; but not seeing him perfectly, because it was dusk, he asked, who it was, but was surprized when he heard

his Voice, and knew who it was,

e

l-

1;

id

ato

at

re

as

nd

to he

his

an!

lan

he

Don't you know me, William! fays his Landlord.

William. Indeed I did not know your Worship at first; I am forry to see you out so late, and't please your Worship, and all alone; I hope you an't on foot too?

D 2

Landlord. Yes, I am William: Indeed I have wander'd through the Wood here a little too far, before I was

aware: Will you go Home with me, William?

Will. Yes, and't please your Worship to accept o' me, with all my Heart; You shall not go alone in the Dark thus: And't please your Worship to stay a bit, I'll go call Goodman Jones and his Son too; we'll all see you safe home.

La. No, no, I'll have none but you, William: Come a-long.

Will. And't please you I'll take my Bill in my Hand

then, 'tis all the Weapons I have.

La. Well do then; but how will you do to leave your Wife and Children?

Will. God will keep them, I hope, and't please your Wor-

ship; his Protection is a good Guard.

La. That's true, William; come along then: I hope there are no Thieves about. [They go together.

Will. Alas! And't please your Worship, 'tis a forry Thief

would rob a Cottage.

La. Well, but that little you have, William, it is some-

thing to you; and you would be loth to lose it.

will. Indeed I could ill spare what I have, tho' it be very mean, because I could not buy more in the Room of it.

La. I know you are poor, William: How many Children have you?

Will. I have four, and't please you.

La. And how do you all live?

Will. Indeed, and't please you, we live all by my hard Labour.

La. And what can you earn a Day, William?

Will. Why, and't please you, I can't get above 10d. a Day now; but when your Worship's good Father was alive, he always gave the Steward Order to allow me 12d. a Day, and that was a great Help to me.

La. Well, but William, can your Wife get nothing?

Will. Truly, now and then she can, in the Summer: But

it is very little; she's but weakly.

La.

aj

al

Ju

th:

La. And have you always Work, William?

will. Truly, and't please you, sometimes I have not; and then it is very hard with us.

La. Well, but you do not want, I hope, William?

Will. No, bleffed be God, and't please you, we do not want; no, no, God forbid I should say we want; we * want nothing but to be more thankful for what we have.

La. Thankful William! Why what hast thou to be

thankful for?

Will. O dear! and't please you, I should be a dreadful Wretch, If I should not be thankful! What should become of me, if I had nothing but what I deserve?

La. Why, what couldst thou be worse than thou art,

William?

Will. The Lord be praised, and't please your. Worship, I might be sick or lame, and could not work, and then we must all perish; or I might be without a Cover; your Worship might turn me out of this warm Cottage, and my Wise and Children would be starv'd with Cold: How many better Christians than I are exposed to Misery and Want, and I am provided for? Blessed be the Lord, I want for † nothing, and't please you.

La. Poor William! thou art more thankful for thy Cottage, than ever I was for the Manor-house; prithee.

William, can you tell me how to be thankful too?

Will. And't please your Worship, I don't doubt but you are more thankful than I; you have a vast Estate, and are Lord of all the Country, I know not how far; to be sure you are more thankful than I, and't please you.

* This struck him to the Heart, that this poor Wretch should

fay he wanted nothing, &c.

de

at

† It was dark, and William could not see him; but he owned afterwards, that it made his Heart burn within him to hear the poor Man talk thus; and the Tears came out of his Eyes so fast, that he walk'd thirty or forty Steps before he could speak to him again.

Ia. I ought to be so, you mean William; I know that;

for it all comes from the same Hand.

Will. I don't doubt but you are very thankful to God, and't please you, to be sure you are; for he has given your Worship great Wealth; and where much is given, you know, and't please you, much is required; to be sure you are much more thankful than I.

La. Truly, William, I'd give a thousand Pound I were as happy, and as thankful as thou art: Prithee, William, tell me how I shall bring myself to be thankful; for tho' thou art a poorer Man, I believe thou art a richer Chris-

tian, than I am.

Will. O! and't please your Worship, I cannot teach you; I am a poor labouring Man; I have no Learning.

La. But what made you so thankful, William, for little

more than Bread and Water?

Will. O Sir! and't please you, my old Father used to fay to me, that to compare what we receive with what we

deferve, will make any body thankful.

La. Indeed that's true, William: Alas! we that are Gentleman are the unhappiest Creatures in the World; we can't quote our Fathers for any I hing that is fit to be named: Was thy Father as thankful as thou art, William?

Will. Yes, and't please you, Sir, and a great deal more: O! I shall never be so good a Christian as my Father was.

La. I shall never be so good a Christian as thou art, william.

will. I hope you are, and't please you, much better already; God has bless'd your Worship with a vast great Estate, and if he gives you Grace to honour him with it, he has put Means in your Worship's Hands to do a great deal of Good with it, and't please you.

La. But you have a better Estate than I, William.

Will. I an Estate! and't please you, I am a poor labouring Man; if I can get Bread by my Work, for my poor Children, it is all I have to hope for on this Side Eternity.

La.

yond this World, and I want that Hope; I am very serious with thee, William: Thou hast taught me more this one Night, of the true Happiness of a Christian's Life, than ever I knew before; I must have more Talk with thee upon this Subject; for thou hast been the best Instructor I ever met with.

Will. Alas! Sir, I am a forry Instructor, I want Help myself, and't please you; and sometimes, the Lord knows, I am hardly able to bear up under my Burden; but, blessed be God, at other Times I am comforted, that my Hope

is not in this Life.

La. I tell thee, William, thy Estate is better than all mine; thy Treasure is in Heaven, and thy Heart's there too; I would give all my Estate to be in thy Condition.

Will. O Sir, I hope your Worship is in a better Con-

dition than I every Way.

La. Look you, William, I am very serious with thee; thou knowest how I have been brought up, for you remember my Father very well.

Will. Yes, I do indeed; he was a good Man to the Poor: I was the better for him many a Day; he was a

worthy Gentleman.

La. But, William, he never took any Care of us that were his Children, to teach us any Thing of Religion; and this is my Case, as it is the Case of too many Gentlemen of Estates; we are the unhappiest Creatures in the World; we are taught nothing, and we know nothing of Religion, or of him that made us; 'tis below us, it seems.

Will. 'Tis great Pity, indeed, and't please you; but I know it is so too often; there's young Sir Thomas ----, your Worship's Cousin, he is a pretty Youth, and may make a fine Gentleman; but though he is but a Child, he has such Words in his Mouth, and will swear so already, it grieves me to hear him sometimes. It is true, his Father is dead; but sure if my Lady knew it, she would teach him better; it is Pity so hopeful a young Gentleman should be ruined.

D 4

La.

La. And who do you think spoiled him?

Will. Some wicked Children, that they let him play

with, I believe, or fome loofe Servants.

La. No, no, William, only his own Father and Mother; I have heard his Father take him when he was a Child. and make him speak lewd Words, and sing immodest Songs, when the poor Child did not so much as know the Meaning of what he said, or that the Words were not sit for him to speak: And you talk of my Lady! why, she will swear and curse as fast as her Coachman: How should the Child learn any better?

Will. O dear, that is a dreadful Case indeed, and't please you! then the poor Youth must be ruined of Necessity; there's no Remedy for him, unless it pleases God to single him out by his distinguishing invincible Grace.

La. Why, his Case, William, is my Case, and the Case of half the Gentlemen in England: What God may do, as you say, by his invincible Grace, I know not; nor scarce know what you mean by that Word; we are from our Insancy given up to the Devil, almost as directly as if we were put out to nurse to him.

Will. Indeed, Sir, and't please you, the Gentlemen do not think much of Religion; I fear it was always so; the Scripture says, Not many rich, not many noble are called; and it is the Poor of this World that are rich in Faith,

Tames .. 5.

La. I find it so indeed, William, and I find myself at a dreadful Loss in this very Thing; I am convinced, the Happiness of Man does not consist in the Estate, Pleasures, and Enjoyments of Life; if so, the Poor alone would be miserable, and the rich Man only be blessed; but there is something beyond this World, which makes up for all that is deficient here: This you have, and I have not; and so, William, you in your poor Cottage are richer and more happy than I am with the whole Manor.

Will. Indeed, Sir, if in this World only we had Hope, the Poor would be of all Men the most miserable; blessed be the Lord, that our Portion is not in this Life. But, Sir,

and't

Ь

t

h

n

g

d

th

fo

ro

B

pi

C

as

as

as W

Co

tin

and

ba

to

and't please you, I hope you will not discourage yourself neither; for God has not chosen the Poor only; rich Men have Temptations from the World, and Hindrances very many, and it is hard for them to enter into the Kingdom of Heaven, but they are not sout; the Gate is not barred upon them because they are rich.

La. I know not how it is, William, nor which Way to begin; but I fee so many Obstructions in the Work, that

I doubt I shall never get over it.

e

0

will. Do not fay so, I beseech you, Sir, and't please you; the Promise is made to all; and if God has given you a Heart to seek him, he will meet you and bless you, for he has said, Their Hearts shall live that seek the Lord. Many great and rich Men have been good Men; we read of good Kings and good Princes; and if your Difficulties are great, you have great Encouragements; for you that are great Men, have great Opportunities to honour God, and do Good to his Church; poor Men are denied these Encouragements; we can only sit still, and be patient under the Weight of our Sorrows, and our Poverty, and look for his Blessing, which alone makes rich, and adds no Sorrow to it.

La. But tell me, William, what is the first Step such a poor uneducated Thing as I am should take? I see a Beauty in Religion, which I cannot reach; I see the Happiness which thou enjoyest, William, in an humble, religious, correct Life; I would give all my Estate to be in thy Condition; I would labour at the Hedge and the Ditch, as thou dost, could I have the same Peace within, and be as thankful, and have such an entire Considence in God as thou hast, I see the Happiness of it, but nothing of the Way how to obtain it.

Will. Alas! Sir, and't please you, you do not know my Condition; I am a poor disconsolate Creature; I am sometimes so lost, so dark, so overwhelmed with my Condition, and with my Distresses, that I am tempted to sear God has forgotten to be gracious; that I am cast off, and lest to sink under my own Burden; I am so unworthy, so

forget-

forgetful of my Duty, so easily let go my Hold, and cast off my Considence, that I fear often I shall despair.

La. And what do you do then, William?

Will. Alas! Sir, I go mourning many a Day, and waking many a Night; but I bless the Lord, I always mourn after him; I always cleave to him; I am not tempted to run from him; I know I am undone, if I seek Comfort in any other: Alas! whether else shall I go? I cry Night and Day, Return, return, O Father: and resolve to lie at his Foot; and that, if he slay me, yet I will trust in him: And blessed be the God of my Hope, he does send Comfort and Peace, tho' sometimes it is very long.

La. Well, William, and this is a disconsolate Condition? Would you change your Condition with me that am the

rich Glutton?

Will. O do not say so of yourself, and't please you; God has touched your Worship's Heart, I perceive, with an earnest Desire after him; you have a gracious Promise, that would greatly encourage you, if you would but take it to yourself.

La. Encourage me, William! that's impossible: What can encourage me? What Promise is it you talk of, that

looks towards me?

Will. Why, and't please you, I heard you say, you would change your Condition with such a poor Wretch as I; you would labour at the Hedge and the Ditch, to have the Knowledge of God and Religion, and to be able to be thankful to him, and have a Considence in him: This implies, that you have a longing earnest Desur after him, and after the Knowledge of his Truth.

La. Indeed, that is true, William.

which speak directly to you, Sir, viz. Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after Righteousness, for they shall be filled: The longing Soul shall be satisfied: He will satisfy the Desires of all those that fear him; and the like.

La. But what must I do? Which is the Way an igno-

rant Wretch must take?

Will.

g

m

be

1

an

fo

F

th

D

fo

ar

to

Wi

T

op

no

ne

no

G

fuc

17

the

He

will. Sir, and't please you, the Way is plain: We must pray to him; Prayer is the first Dury, and Prayer is the

greatest Privilege we can enjoy in the World.

La. Ay, William; but there is a great deal required in Prayer, that I am an utter Stranger to: I never prayed in my Life; no, nor I believe my Father or Grandfather befor me, William! I came of a curfed Race, William, and I doubt 'tis entailed upon the Family, like the Estate.

Will. O, Sir, do not fay that: the Scripture is plain, and't please you, that the Children shall not be punished

for the Father's Transgression.

La. But then certainly they must not tread in their Father's Steps, as I do exactly, William.

Will. That's true, indeed, Sir, they must not tread in

those Steps.

R

-

n

0

rt

It

at

1+

!

10

bc

an

le,

KC

at

at

ıld

ou

he

be

his

m,

es,

ley

all

vill

ke.

10-

La. But what dost talk then of Prayer being the first Duty? Why, if that be the first Thing, I must not begin; for how can such a Creature as I pray to God?

Will. As the Spirit of God will affift those whose Hearts are towards him, so we must pray that we may be taught

to pray.

La. Is it not a difficult Thing for a man to pray to God, William, that scarce ever thought of God in all his Life?

Will. Well, Sir, but who do you think put those Thoughts into your Mind which you now have; and who opened your Eyes, Sir, to see a Beauty in Religion, as now you see; and touched your Heart with such an earnest Desire after the Ways and Things of God, as you now expressly say you have; Do you think this is not of God, and't please you?

La. Indeed, William, I know not; it would be a very

delightful Thing to me, if I thought it was fo.

Will. Without Question, Sir, it is: Man can have no such Power; Nature prompts us to evil Thoughts and evil Desires, and to them only; the 'Imagination of the 'Thoughts of our Hearts are evil, and only evil,' if there are any Good Motions, or heavenly Desires in the Heart, they are from God. 'Every good Gift, and e-

tW

tel

Co

kn

an

de

w

ar

th

er

to

be

bu

ma

fir

of

Pr

W

it

R

an

w

th

or

W

pr

ju

th

very perfect Gift comes down from above; 'tis his Power works them, his invisible Grace forms all holy Desires in the Soul.

La. Well; and what do you infer from thence, William? Will. Why, Sir, and't please you, if God has begun a good Work, he will persect it; if he has turned your Face towards him, he will lift up your Heart to him: To pray to God is as natural to a Convert, as to cry after the Father or Mother is to an Infant.

La. Thou speakest, William, with more Clearness than ever I heard before; but 'tis a strange Thing to me to talk of praying to God! I pray! that, except just the common Road of going to Church, cannot say that ever I kneeled down to pray to God once in all my Life! How shall I pray?

Will. That's fad indeed, and't please you! I am sorry to hear your Worship say so: Does any Creature live, and not pray to God! O! dear! that's a sad dreadful Thing in Truth! But, however, Sir, do not let that hin-

der you now.

La. How dost mean hinder me? What can be faid to hinder me doing what I have no Knowledge in, no Noti-

on of, no Inclination to?

Will. O Sir, and't please you, you mistake your own Condition very much: Do not discourage yourself thus; you know how to pray better than many that make much Noise with their Devotion, I see it plainly.

La. 1 pray! William; I pray! I tell thee, I never

prayed in my Life, as I know of.

Will. And't please your Worship not to be angry with

me for my plain Way-----

La. Prithee, William, be plain, and speak freely; don't worship me and fir me now; talk to me as if I were your Neighbour or Comrade; these are not Things to talk of with Cringes and Bows: I am a wretched, contemptible, poor, rich Man: thou art a poor, rich, happy Christian: Talk plainly to me, William, the coarser the better, I like it best; there will be no Difference, William, between

tween thee and I hereafter, but what will be on thy Side tell me therefore what you mean, William, by my Praying! Will. Why, Sir, you allow me to be plain, then, I fay, you mistake your own Condition, and thereby put off the Comfort you might receive; I say, you do pray, and know better how to pray, than many that come to Church and appear as if they prayed every Day.

La. You must explain yourself, William, I do not un-

derstand you.

V-

es

13

a

ır

0

er

an

to

ne

er

e!

ry

e,

ul

n-

to

ti-

Vn

18;

ch

er

th

n't

ur

of

le,

n:

I

e-

Will. Why, Sir, those earnest Desires you have after the Knowledge of God, and after the true Worship of God, which is the Sum of Religion, I say, those earnest Desires are really Prayers in their own Nature; sincere Wishes of the Heart for Grace are Prayers to God for Grace; Prayer itself is nothing but those Wishes and Desires put into Words, and the first is the essential Part; for there may be Words used without the Desire, and that is no Prayer, but a Mockery of God; but the Desires of the Heart may be Prayers, even without the Words.

La. You surprize me a little, William.

Will. Besides; Sir, and't please you, those earnest Desires you have after Religion, and after the Knowledge of God, will force you to pray first or last, in a verbal Prayer; they will break out like a Flame that cannot be with-held; your Heart will pray, when you know not of it: Praying to God, Sir, is the first Thing a Sense of Religion dictates, as a Child crieth as soon as it is born.

La. Alas! William, I know nothing of it; I am fuch an unaccountable Wretch, God knows, I know nothing what belongs to praying, not I; thou hast let me see farther into it, by that thou saidst just now, than ever I saw

or heard before.

Will. Why, look ye now, and't please you, I told you it would break out when you knew not of it, and you would pray to God before you were aware: Did you not pray just now?

La. Pray! Why, what did I fay? I faid, I know no-

thing of Prayer.

Will,

Will. Nay, that was not all: What is the Meaning of those Words, Alas, William! and whence came that Sigh when you called yourself that hard Name? and what was the Sense of your Soul but this, God be merciful to me, and teach me to pray; for alas! I know nothing what belongs to praying: Was not all this praying?

La. Indeed, William, my Heart had such a Kind of Meaning; but I cannot form the Thought into Words,

no not into my very Soul.

Will. It is all one, Sir: God that moves the Soul certainly hears his own Motion; how should he but hear it? Is it not his own working! The Preparation of the Heart, and the Answer of the Tongue, is of the Lord: He will hear every sincere Desire, which he forms in your Soul, whether it be conceived into Words or no; for it is the Voice of his own Spirit and Grace.

wonder you enjoy such a shining Beam of Light in your own Soul, when you have such a Sense of Things as this; you shall be my Instructor, William; I may call you Father rather; for thou art better to me than ten Fathers.

Will. O Sir, and't please you, my Discomforts are very great, and the Beam you speak of is very dim in me; do not speak of such Things of me; it makes me very sad; for I know my own Darkness, I am a poor despis'd Creature.

La. Well, but God may make you an Instrument of Good to me, or to any one he pleases. I never had thus much Instruction in my Life, William,; you will not be backward to do Good, I hope, if it be thus cast in your Way.

Will. I shalt be very glad, if such a Worm, as I am, should be an Instrument in God's Hand to comfort or inform your Worship, and shall praise God for the Occasion as long as I live; and indeed I rejoice, and't please you, to see your Worship enquiring after these Things; I pray Godincrease the Knowledge of himselfin your Mind, and comfort you with the Hope of his Presence and Blessing.

La. Amen, I thank you, William.

Will.

pr

tha

A

the

thi

en

an

of

rea

VO

yo

itle

·I

· t

th

W

be

pr

WI

no

W

to

W

an

yo

it,

kt W

will. Look you now, Sir, and't please you, did you no pray then again?

La. I join'd with you, William; I don't know; but if

that be praying, I think I did pray.

Will Thus God will move your Heart to pray to him: And I befeech your Worthip to read the Scriptures; read them much, read them feriously, and pray, Sir, observe this one Thing, when you read, which I have experienc'd often, and very comfortably; and I dare fay, you and every one that reads the Word of God, with Defire of a Bleffing, will experience the like, viz. When you are reading, and come to any Place that touches you, and that your Mind is affected with, you shall find, even whether you will or no, your Heart will every now and then life itself up thus, 'Lord! make good this Word to me! Lord! draw my Heart thus to thee! Lord! help me thus to feek thee,' and the like; and be not afraid to call that praying; for mental Petition is Prayer as well as Words; and is, perhaps, the best mov'd Prayer, and the best express'd in the World.

La. You will persuade me, William, that I both have pray'd already, and shall again, whether I will or no, and whether I know any Thing of it or no, and that I want

no Teaching.

of

gb

as

ne,

280

of

ds,

n-

Is

rt,

lliv

ul,

he

n't

ur

iis;

rs.

ve-

ne;

id;

of

hus

be

ay.

in-

caafe

ags;

nd,

ng.

Will. Pray, Sir, does a Child want to be taught to cry?

La Will that Simile hold, William?

Will. Indeed it will, Sir: Read the Scripture; if God's Word reaches your Heart, you will not need to be taught

to pray.

La. I told you, William, you hardly knew who you were talking to: You talk of my reading the Scripture; why, I'll tell thee, William, I ha'n't a Bible in the World, and never had one in my Life: There's the Manor-house yonder; I question whether God was ever pray'd to in it, or his Name ever mention'd there, except prophanely, or perhaps to swear by it, since 'twas built: Why you know as well as I, what a Family it was that liv'd in it when my Father purchas'd it; they were as much Stran-

gers

gers to Religion, william, as thou art to Greek and Herbrew; and ours were but little better, that came after them.

Will. I fear indeed, and't please your Worship, it was so: Poor Gentlemen! they liv'd badly indeed, very badly. Alas! Gentlemen must not be told of it by us poor Men; but they were a sad wicked Family, I remember it well.

thou not? and I'll read it all over while I stay in the

Country.

Will. Yes, and't please your Worship, I'll lend you a Bi-

C

1

fek

BI

21

th

Ka

th

ev

tic

no

na

an

rei

viz

Pr

rea

Ma

Cal

mil

ble: I'll bring it in the Morning.

La. Do, William, and come and stay with me to-morrow; I'll make thee amends for thy Day's Work, and there's * fomething for thy good Advice, and coming so far with me.

Will. Thank your Worthip.

They were now come to the Manor-house, and he was loth to detain him, because it was late, and because they were so affected with the Discourse they had had that he

wanted very much to be alone.

As foon as he came into his own House, he lock'd himself into a Parlour, and began to consider with great Seriousness all these Things, and especially what the poor Man had said to him about praying to God; and as his Thoughts were intent upon the Meaning of Prayer, the Nature of it, and the Advantages of it, at every Turn of these Thoughts he found a secret Kind of Hint like a Voice in him, not Voice to him, O that I could pray! O, if I could but pray as the poor Man does! How happy should I be, if I could but pray to God! and the like. He was not aware of these Movements; they seemed to be wrought in his Affections perfectly involuntary and sudden; and they pass'd over without being notic'd and observ'd, even by himself, till after a good while they re-

^{*} He gives him some Money, and sends him back again.

turned stronger and more frequent upon him; so that he not only perceived it, but remembered how often his Heart had thrown out those Expressions; when on a sudden the poor Man's Words came into his Mind with such a Force; as if the Man himself had been there; why this was praying; certainly I have been praying all this while, and knew it not.

1:

1-

0

29

he

e-

or

his

he

of

e a

0,

py.

ke.

be

id-

ob-

re-

Upon this Reflexion, it was impossible for him to express, as he faid afterwards, what a strange Rapture of loy posses'd his Mind, and how his Heart was turn'd within him; then he fell into the same sacred Ejaculations of another Kind, viz. of Admiration, Praises, Thanksgiving, and mere Astonishment; but still without speaking otherwise than a kind of mental Voice, sounding or injecting Words into his Mind, fuch a thefe, Lord! shall I be brought to pray to God! I that have never been told fo much as how to mention his Name! I that have never known any thing of God, or myself! or have been taught any thing of my Duty to him! shall I be taught to pray! and taught by who! by this poor despicable Creature, that, at another Time, I would not have spoke to if he had made me twenty Bows and Scrapes! His Tongue then was let loofe; and he cry'd out, Bleffed be God that ever I came near that poor Man.

He continued all that Evening filled with comforting Reflexions, and with a kind of inward Peace and Satisfaction; which as he had never known before, so he knew not how to describe or relate it, or indeed how to manage it: In the Morning he found the same Meditation and the same Lightness upon his Spirits return'd and he remembered what the poor Man had pray'd for, for him, viz. That he might be comforted with the Hopes of the Presence and Blessing of God, to which his Heart had so readily said, Amen: And now he long'd for the poor

Man's coming with the Bible.

The poor Man was likewise mightily affected with his Case, considering him a young Gentleman of such a Family and Fortune; and who was so far above him, as that,

F

tho'

tho he was his Landlord, he durst never offer to speak to him in his Life, but with the greatest Submission and Dissance; how he should come to call him out, and to talk to him, of Juch T bings especially, and in so serious a Manner.

He then reflected with a serious Joy, that this young Gentleman should be thus touch'd with a solid Sense of Religion and good Things, for it was easy to see, that it was not a slight or an insucere Work upon his Mind; it rejoiced his Heart, that the Heir of the Estate should be thus likely to prove a good Man; and it presently occurr'd to his Thoughts how great a Blessing such a Gentleman might be to the Country, to the Poor, and to the uninstructed People round him; as well by reforming their Manners, and restraining their Vices, as perhaps by bringing Religion to be accepted and received among them by his Example.

These were some of the Thoughts he came along with, and he pray'd to God, as he walk'd, very earnestly, that he might be made an Instrument to bring the Soul of this Gentleman to the Knowledge of God, and to bow at

the Footstool of his Redeemer as a true Penitent.

His Prayers were not in vain: Prayers put up from fuch a Principle, and with fuch a Spirit, feldom is made in vain.

He came to the Gentleman while he was in Bed; for he had given Orders to his Servants to bring him up to his Chamber; there he deliver'd him the Bible, and told him he hoped he would find in it both Encouragement and Direction in the great Work which he was going about, and that God would bless him, and would supply by his Grace all the Wants of early Instruction, which he had so much complain'd of.

He received the poor Man with a glad Heart, made him fit down by him, and told him God had made him the Instrument of so much Good to him, that he could not part with him any more while he stay'd in the Country.

William, fays he, God has made you a Father to me, and I'll be a Father to you and your Family; you shall

go no more Home to that poor Cottage, you shall have something else to be thankful to God for than Bread and Water.

Will. And't please your Worship, I have much more to be thankful for than that already; but if God has been pleased to assist me to do you Good in this great Business of bringing such a Soul as yours to the Knowledge of himself, I shall have Cause to praise him beyond all that ever I had before.

La. Well, William, I have fent for your Wife and Children; they shall be my Care now, not yours; I'll provide

a House for you.*

t

r

0

d

1-

y

de

ne

ot

le,

all

Will. Your Worship will be a Father to me and my Family indeed then; I can never deserve so much at your Hands; and't please you, I am very willing to work still

for my Bread, I thank your Worship.

La. No, William, you shall never work any more for your Bread; you have been thankful for a little, William; I heard you last Night, when you were at Prayer in your Family, and giving Thanks to God for the Plenty you enjoy'd. Poor William! you do not know how it affected me, that never gave God Thanks in my Life; now you shall be thankful for better Things.

Will. I shall be greatly bound to be thankful to your

Worship too, and't please you.

La. No, William, do not thank me, thank God still.

Will. And your Worship mend my Condition, I fear my Thankfulness to God should abate: When I liv'd so near Misery and Distress, it made me more sensible of God's Goodness, in keeping me out of it, than I may, I doubt, when I am full.

La. I do not think you will ever be unthankful, william, that could be fo full of a Sense of God's Mercy, even in the extremest Poverty: But come, William, I shall

leave

^{*} Note, He gave him a House and a little Farm Rent free tolive on, and made him his Bailiff, and Receiver of the Rents of the Manor.

leave that; I have order'd my Steward both to provide for and employ you, and I shall say no more of that now; but my Business now is of another Nature: And first, I must tell you how I have been employed, * since I lest you last Night.

Will. O Sir! give God the Praise, this is all his own Work; and I hope your Comfort shall increase and continue: Did I not tell you, Sir, God would teach you to

pray?

Ja. But now, William, what shall I do with this Book?

Will. Read it, Sir, and't please you, and you will pray

over, whether you will or no.

La. But I am still ignorant; I have no Minister near

me to explain it to me.

will. The Spirit of God will expound his own Word to you.

La. Well, William, you shall be my Minister: Come,

fit down by me, and read in it.

Will. Alas! I am a forry Creature to be a Teacher, Sir; but, and't please you, I have turn'd down some Places, which I thought of, to shew your Worship for your first reading.

La. That's what I wanted, William.

will. And't please you, here's a Text which tells you, what is the whole Design of a written Gospel; for what End the Life of our Blessed Redeemer was laid down, and his Works and Doctrine were published to the World; and this seems to be the first Thing we should know of the Scriptures: for indeed it is the Sum and Substance of them.

La. Let me see it, William.

william. Here it is, Sir, 'These Things are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son

^{*} Here he gave the poor Man an Account of himself, and of his Reslexions upon what he had said to him, and how insensibly he had received secret Comfort, as above; and he sound Tears run down the poor Man's Cheeks, all the while he was talking to him, for Joy.

of God, and that believing ye might have Life thro' his

Name, John xx. 31.

La. That is very comprehensive indeed, William!

Will. And here is another Passage I solded down, lest you should ask, how you should do to believe; it is in Mark ix. 24. it is a Story of a Man, who brings his Child to our Lord to be healed, when posses'd of an evil Spirit: Our Lord asks him, if he could believe: 'If thou canst believe, all Things are possible to him that believeth; and v. 24. The Father cried out with Tears, Lord, I believe, help thou my Unbelief.

La. What do you* look at me for, William?

will. O Sir! I saw your very Heart; I know you pray'd; I know you said Amen in your very Soul to that Word: Glory be to the Grace of God, and to the Word of God for you; the Scripture, read with such a Heart as yours now is, will soon teach you all that you want to know, and all that you want to do.

The poor Gentleman was overcome with his Words, and could not speak for a good while; Tears came out of his Eyes, and at last he burst out thus; Lord! what a Creature have I been, that have lived without the Teachings of the Scriptures all my Days!

Thus far this happy poor Man was made an Instrument to the restoring this Gentleman, and bringing him to the Knowledge of God, and to a Sense of Religion; and in a Word, to be a most sincere Christian. We shall hear far-

ther of him after the next Dialogue.

* William looks full in his Face, while he repeated the Words,

The End of the Second Dialogue,

DIA,

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

DIALOGUE III.

E must now go back to the Family which we began with: The Father of the young Ladies was gone into the Country to visit his Sister, who was newly become a Widow; little thinking, whatever his eldest Daughter had said to him, that his youngest Daughter would mak, such short Work with her Lover in his Absence, and that she would quite put an end to his Courtship all at one Blow, as she had done, before he came Home again.

He spent some little Time at his Sister's, to comfort her, and assist her in her Assairs after the Loss of her Husband; and particularly, because her eldest Son being of Age, and just upon marrying, she intended to remove; the House which was the Seat of the Family being to be sitted up for her new Daughter-in-law: Upon these Circumstances he began the following Discourse with his Sister.

Bro. Well, pray Sister, what kind of a Lady has my

Nephew got? Is he well married?

Sift. Truly, Brother, I can hardly tell how to answer you that Question; I believe every body will be better pleas'd than I.

Bro. Why, Sifter, what is the Cause, pray, that you

are fo difficult?

Sift. O Brother! the main Difficulty that has made me all my Days the most miserable of all Women.

Bro. What! Religion, I warrant you; you would have

him married a Nun?

Sift. Nay, I don't know why I should desire a religi-

ous Woman to come into the Family.

Bro. I never faw the like of you, Sister, you are always a complaining; you have had one of the best humour'd, goodest-

goodest-condition'd, merriest Fellows in the World for this five and twenty Years, and yet you call yourself a miserable woman: what could you ask in a Husband,

that you had not in Sir Fames?

Sift. Dear Brother, is this a Time for me to tell you what I wanted in Sir James, when he is in his Grave? I have wanted nothing in him, that a Woman could defire in a Husband; he was rich in his Estate, a lovely, compleat, handsome Gentleman in his Person, and held it to the last; he was the best humour'd Man that ever Woman had, and kind, as a Husband to the last Degree: I never saw him in a Passion in my Life; he was a Man of good Sense and good Learning; a Man of Honour, good Breeding, and good Manners; none went beyond him; all the Country knows it, and lov'd him for it.

Bro. Very well; and yet my Sister a miserable Woman! Would not any Man laugh at you? I think, Sister, if ever you were a miserable Woman, it is now; because

you have lost him.

Sift. Well, that's true too; I am so now, many ways, and some perhaps that you do not think of, Brother.

Bro. I know what you mean again; I warrant you have been whining over him, to think what is become of him now: Prithee what's that to you, or I? What can you by your Concern for him do in that Case, one Way or other; can't you leave him to God's Mercy now he's gone?

Sist. Dear Brother, it is in vain to answer you; I must leave him to God's Mercy, and so we must leave ourselves: but do you think, 'tis not an afflicting, dreadful Thing to me, that know how he liv'd, and how he died, to reflect upon his Condition, if I had any Love for him?

Bro. Why, how did he live? He liv'd like a Gentle-

man, as he was.

Sift. That's true; and that, as Times go, Brother, is to live like a Heathen; you know well enough, what a Life I have had with him on that only Account; you know, he was so far from having any Sense of Religion,

E 4

or

or of his Maker, on his Mind, that he made a Jest and a Mock of it all his Days, even to the last.

Bro. I know he did not trouble himself much about it. Sist. Nay, he not only did not himself, but he did not really love to have any Body about him religious: I have known many Gentlemen that have had no Religion themselves, yet value it in others, and value and reverence good Men; but he thought all People Hypocrites that talk'd of any thing religious; and could not abide to see any Appearance of it in the House; it was the only Thing we had any Difference about all our Days.

Bro. And I think you were a great Fool to have any Difference with him about that: Could not you ha' kept your Religion to yourself, and have let him alone to be as merry and as froliciome as he would without it?

Sift. Nay, I was oblig'd to do that, you may be fure;

th M

m

W

th

it

of

lig

fo

on

th

th

Wi

lig

tu

you know it well enough.

Bro. Yes, yes, I know he ferved you many a merry Prank about your religious Doings, such as putting every nowand then a Ballad in your Prayer-Book or Psalm-Book; and I think he put the Story of Tom Thumb once in one of Dr. Tillotson's Sermons.

Sift. No; twas two Leaves out of Don Quixote. He

did a great many fuch Things as those to me.

Beo. But they were all Frolicks, there was nothing of Passion or Ill-nature in them: Did not he write something in the Childrens Spelling Book once, and make them get it without Book, instead of the Lesson you had set them?

Sift. Yes, yes, he play'd me a thousand Tricks that way.

Bro. I think once he pasted a Receipt to make a Tanzy or a Cake, just next to one of the Questions of the Catechisms, where your Daughter's Lesson was.

Sift. Ay, ay; and every now and then he would paste a fingle printed Word, that he cut out of some other Book, just over another Word in the Books, so cunningly, that they could not perceive it, and make them read Nonsense.

Bro. Why what Harm was there in all that?

Sift. Why, it shewed his general Contempt of good I hings,

Things, and making a Mock of them; otherwise the Thing was not of so much Value.

Bro. Well, and wherein was you miserable, pray, in

all this? I don't understand you in that at all.

Sift. Why in this, that he was not at all a religious

Bro. But what was that to you, still?

sift. Why, first, Brother, there was all Family-Religion lost at one Blow; there could not be so much as the Appearance of worshipping or acknowledging the God that made us; nay, we scarce asked him leave to eat our Meat, but in secret, as if we were ashamed of it: Sir James never so much as said Grace or gave Thanks at Table in his Life, that I remember.

Bro. And they that do, make it nothing but a Ceremony, and do it for Fashion-sake; not that they think it

fignifies any thing.

will, but let them do it for Fashion-sake then if they will, but let them do it; 'tis the most rational thing in the World, while we own that God gives us our Meat, that we should ask him seave to eat it; and thank him for it when we have done: But alas! this is but a small Part of the ill Consequences of an irreligious Family.

Bro. Well, what more is there? for this is nothing but what is in thousands of Families, who pretend to Re-

ligion on all Sides.

Sift. Why, all relative Religion was lost too.

Bro. Relative Religion! Sifter, what do you mean by

Sift. Why, First, I mean by it, that Religion which ought to be between a Man and his Wife; such as comforting, encouraging, and directing one another, helping one another on in the Way to Heaven, affilting one another in Christian Duties, praying with and for one another, and much more which I could name; and which, without doubt, passes to their mutual Comfort and Deslight between a Man and his Life, where they are mutually agreed in worshipping and serving God, and walks

ing on in the happy Course of a religious Life: All this has been lost, and it has been a sad Loss to me, Brother; we have all need of Helps, and it is not every one that considers, or indeed that knows, what Help, what Comfort, what Support, a religious Husband and Wife are or may be to one another; this, I say, has been a sad Loss to me, I assure you.

Bro. These are nice Things; but, methinks, if you could not have these Helps from your Husband, you might find them in other Things, such as Books, Ministers, &c.

it need not be called fuch a Loss neither.

Sift. 'Tis such a Loss, Brother, that if I were to live my Days over again, I would not marry a Man that made no Profession of Religion; no! tho' he had ten thousand Pounds a Year, and I had but a hundred Pounds to my Portion; nay, I think I would work for my Bread, rather.

Bro. You lay a mighty Stress upon these Things.

Sist. Every Body, Brother, that has any Sense of the Blessing of a religious Family, must do so. Pray if the honouring and serving God be our Wisdom, our Duty, our Felicity in this World, and our way to the next, what Comfort, what Happiness can there be, where these are wanting in the Head of the Family?

Bro. It is better, to be fure, where they may be had; but to lay all the Happiness of Life upon it, as if a Man or a Woman could not be religious by themselves, without they were so both together, I do not see that; I

think you carry it too far.

Sift. I'll convince you, that I do not carry it too far at all; I do not say a Man or a Woman may not be religious by themselves, tho' the Husband or Wife be not so; but I say, all the Help and Comfort of relative Religion is lost; the Benefit and Value of which none knows, but they that enjoy it, or feel the Want of it; but there is another Loss, which I have not named, and which my Heart bleeds in the Sense of every Day.

Bro. What's that, I wonder?

ha

of

lit

en

ev

let

fu

fel

fel

A

no

yo

yo

th

the

as I

is 1

car

de

me

at

if]

ke

tha

fro

up

ple

Sist. Why, Children! Brother, Children! you see I have five Children: What dreadful Work has this want of Family-Religion made among my poor Children!

Bro. Why, Sir James did not hinder you instructing

your Children!

8

ıt

1-

1

S

u

ıt

C.

e

le

d

y

1+

ıe

10

y,

at

C

1;

ın

ı. I

ar

1-

0;

on

ut

a-

ly

Sift. Did he not? 'tis true he did not, when they were little; but has he not by Example and want of Restraint encourag'd all manner of Levity, Vanity, Folly, nay, and even Vice itself in them? Do you think Children, thus let loose to humour their young Inclinations, and to the sull Swing of their Pleasures, would not soon snatch themselves out of the Arms of their Mother, and deliver themselves from the Importunities of one that had no other Authority with them than that of Affection?

Bro. Why, truly, there is something in that; but I do not see that your Children are much the worse; there's your eldest Son, Sir James that is now; he is a pretty young Gentleman; I hear a very good Character of him.

Sift. Why, truly, Brother, as Times go now with Gentlemen, we may be thankful, neither he nor his Brother are debauched or vicious; and I am thankful for it; they have good Characters for modest pretty Gentlemen, as you say: But still, Brother, the main Thing is wanting; I cannot be pratial to them, tho' they are my own; there is not the least Sense or Notion of Religion in them; they cannot say they have no Knowledge of it; I took care to deprive them of that Excuse, as early as they knew any Thing: But it goes no farther; my eldest Son will tell me sometimes, he has as much Religion as a Gentleman of a thousand a Year should have; and his Brother tells me, if I would have had him have any Religion, I should have kept our Parish living for him, and bred him a Parson.

Bro. They are very merry with you then, I find, upon

that Subject.

Sist. It is a dreadful Jest to me, Brother; I am far from taking it merrily; you know, I was otherwise brought up; our Father and Mother were another Sort of People, they united their very Souls in the Work of God;

they

they joined in every good Thing with the utmost Affection; they loved the Souls as well as the Bodies of us their Children; the Family was a House of chearful Dovotion: God was served Night and Day; and in a Word, as they lived, so they died; they dropped comfortably off, and went, as it were, Hand in Hand to Heaven.

of

th

th

as

bo

le

fu

W

of

Wa

th

T

tha

fay

be

Gr Fa

fin

Ge

gio

וטת

tha

Te

thi

of

as

Bro. And yet, Sister, you see, we that were their Children were not all alike; there's our Brother Jack, and our Sisters Bettyand Sarah, what can be said about them?

Pray what Religion are they of?

Sift. I'll tell you, what can be faid, and what will stick close to them one Time or other, viz. If they are lost, it is not for want of good Instruction, or good Example; they cannot blame Father or Mother; it has been all their own: Parents may beg Grace for their Children, but they cannot give it them; they may teach their Children good Things, but they cannot make them learn; that is the Work of God, and Parents must submit it to him: But when Parents do nothing; nay, rather by Example and Encouragement, lead their Children into Wickedness; what a dreadful Thing is that!

Bro. Well, but our two Sisters were not led into Wickedness: and yet, as I said, they value Religion as little as

any Body.

Sift. Ay, Brother, I can tell you, how my Sisters were both ruined; for they were not so educated.

Big. What do you mean by ruined? they are not ruin-

ed, I hope.

Si/t. I mean as to their Principles, Brother, which I think is the worst Sort of Ruin; they were ruined by marrying profligate irreligious Husbands.

Bro. I don't know what you mean by profligate; I

think they are both very well married.

Sift. Yes, as you call married, and that I call being un-

Bro. And pray what has ruined Jack? for he's as graceless Wretch almost as your Sir James was.

Sift. Truly, Brother, just the other Extreme: he has

a wild, giddy, Playhouse bred Wise; sull of Wit, and void of Grace, that never had any Religion, nor knew what the Meaning of it was; this has ruined him. My Brother was a soler, well-taught, well-inclined young Man, as could be desired; but getting such a Tempter at his Elbow, instead of a Wise to help him on to Heaven, she has led him hood-wink'd to the Gates of Hell, and goes chearfully along with him; a sad Instance, Brother, of the Want of Family-Religion.

Bro. Well, but what's all this to what we were upon, of Parents leading their Children into Wickedness? he

was not led fo by his Parents.

ir

n:

ey

be

il-

nd
a?

ck

it

e;

eir

out

is

m: ple

fs;

k-

as

ere

in-

ink

ing

; I

un-

acc:

has

Sift. But you fee his Children are.

Bro. I cannot say that; few Parents, tho' they are bad themselves, will prompt their Children to be so too: That's what I have seldom seen.

Si t. Well, that has been the Case of my Family; and that it is, that has broke my Heart, and gives me Cause to say, I have been the most miserable Woman alive.

Bro. But you have this Comfort still, that you have not

been the Occasion of it.

Sift. That's true; but even that does not leffen the Grief, of seeing my Children lost and ruined before my Face, and their own Father be the Instrument to it.

Bro. They cannot be faid to be ruined; they are very

fine Gentlemen, I affure you.

Sift. They are ruined, as to the best Qualification of a Gentleman.

Bro. I warrant you they do not think so, Sister: Religion makes us good Christians, that is confessed; but I do
not see it makes a Gentleman. What is more frequent,
than to see Religion make Men cynical and sour in their
Tempers, morose and surly in their Conversation? They
think themselves above the Practice of good Manners or
good Humour.

Si/t. This is all by the Mistake of the Thing; 'tis want of Religion that makes Men thus. It is in good Breeding, as it is in Philosophy; a little Philosophy, a little Learn-

ing makes a Man an Atheift, a great deal brings him back, and makes him a Christian: So a little Religion makes a Man a Churl, but a great deal teaches him to know himfelf, and be a Gentleman. When good Principles join with good Manners, how should they but illustrate the Education, and fet off the Breeding of a Man of Quality? As it is a Mistake to say, that Jewels should be worn by none but homely women, it is just the contrary; so Religion adorns Education, as Jewels give real Beauty a double Lustre.

P

1

th

N

00

I

af

in

L

th

I

th

th

m

7

el

lig

of

pl

H

A Wi

th

ed fto

th

ca

Bro. Your Notions are delicate; you are very nice, it feems, in these Things, Sister; tho' I must confess I am

of your Mind, when I consider it well,

Sift. Let the Scripture be Judge, whether the Rules of Life dictated by the Apoltles to the Christian Churches were not fuch, as not only agree well with that of a Gentleman, but indeed with that, without which no Man can be a Gentleman; if you look almost through all the Epistles in the New Testament, you will find it so: I'll name you a few.

Phil. i. 9, 10. That your Love may abound in Knowledge and all Judgment .---- There's

Wisdom and Learning.

I hat ye may approve Things that are excellent .---- There's folid Judgment.

That you may be sincere, and without Offence.---- There is the Honesty and Open-heartedness of a true Gentleman.

Love as Brethren, be pitiful, be courteous. ---- There's the Charity, the Beneficence, and the good Breeding of a

Gentleman.

Col. iii. 12. Put on Bowels of Mercy, Kindness, Humbleness of Mind, Meekness, &c. ----- Who can be a Gentleman without these?

> What joever Things are honest, just, pure, levely, and of good Report, think of these I bings.

1 Pet.

Col. iv. 8.

Things.----What think you now? Can the Practice of these Things dishonour a Gentleman? or do they honour and illustrate, and indeed make a Gentleman? In Lowlinss of Mind let each esteem others better than themselves,---What becomes a Gentleman more than such Humility?

Phil. il. 3.

k.

9 2

m-

oin

he

ty?

by

eli-

ble

it

am

of

hes

Ian.

the

I'll

edge

re's

ex-

and

nan.

nefi-

of a

nefs,

&c.

hout

these

t. OfI could name you many other: Will any Man that reads these Rules say, they are not suitable to a Gentleman? No, Brother, it shall ever be a Rule to me, that the only compleat Man upon Earth is a religious Gentleman.

Bro. Why, are you wrapt up in these Notions, Sister; I fancy you have been documenting my Daughter; I am afraid on't, I assure you; she has got just the same Things in her Noddle, and she has carried her Scruples to such a Length, that she had like to have refused the best Match that ever will be offered to her as long as she lives; but I believe I rattled her out of it when I came away.

Sist. I am perhaps the fuller of it, because it has been the Ruin of my Family, and of my Children; and, I think, if ever poor Woman was unhappy with a Gentleman that had not one bad Quality in him, it was I; Sir James, as I told you, was such a Man, for every thing else, as there are few such in the World; but he hated Re-

ligion, and that has ruined us all.

Bro. You would make any one laugh to hear you talk of being ruined; why, are you not left happy, easy, and pleasant? Is not your eldest Son a Baronet, and has 1400% a Year? Is not your second Son very well provided for? Have notyour Daughters 5000% a-piece Fortune left them? And are not you left so rich, you know not what to do with it all!

sist. I do not speak of Ruin as you understand it, Brother; I think a Family without Religion is a Family ruined, and that in the worst Sense that Ruin can be understood in; if I were to marry again, I would not marry the best Duke in the Nation that would not endeavour to carry me to Heaven, and to go there himself: The Com-

mand

mand of the Scripture is plain in it, Be not unequally yoked, 2 Cor. vi. 14. How shall a Husband, that professes no Religion, dwell with a Wife according to Knowledge? I Pet. iii. 7. and what is the Reason the Apostle gives for this Christian Rule in marrying, but this, That your Prayers be not hindered?

Bro. Why, Sir James did not hinder your Prayers, Sister, sist. Did he not? Sir James is in his Grave, and 'tis not my Part to say what he did; but 'tis the mutual Prayers of Husband and Wife together that's meant in that Scripture: Do you think Sir James prayed with his Wife?

Bro. No, I believe he did not indeed, nor with any

Body elfe.

Sift. And do you think that's the Life of a Christian, or the Manner of a Christian Family, Brother? You and I were not bred up so, and yet our Father was a Gentleman, and wanted neither Family nor Fortune equal to any of them. Sir James is in his Grave, and I have no more to say of that; but if I were as young as I was when I married him, and were to chuse again, I would not marry the best Nobleman in the Nation, if he was not a religious Man; all Enjoyments in the World are nothing without it, unless I resolve to cast off all Religion too; and where would that end!

Bro. This is just my Daughter again.

Sist. Besides, Brother, consider another thing: How many young Women and young Men too, who have been religiously bred, has this way of Marrying been a Snare to? that when they come to Husbands with no Religion, or to giddy, loose, prophane Wives, they drop all their own Principles, and become empty of all Religion too at last: You know how it has been with our Brothers and Sisters, as I hinted to you before.

Bro. There's no arguing with you, Sifter, who have had so much Experience of it: But I tell my Daughter,

that perhaps the may convert her Husband.

sift. I don't know my Niece's Case, and so I can say little to it; but if this be it, that she refuses a Man for his

being of no Religion, the is in the right; the is a good relia gious Child herfelf: My Sifter educated all your Children very well, and if the marries a Gentleman, as the Times go now, that thinks Religion below him, and unbecoming, as most of them do, the is undone.

Bro. So she fays, and has just your Arguments; that

made me fay you had been documenting her.

Sift. No, indeed, Brother, not I; but I'll tell you what I have been; I have been a Memento to the Family, and do not doubt but my Sifter might shew them the Danger of it by their Aunt's Example: I pray God, they take Warning. I know the was not wanting to them in her Instruction; andin cautioning them against every Thing that was hurtful; and if the forgot this of cautioning them never to marry a Man of no Religion, then the was not that wife Woman I took her for.

Bro. I know not who has cautioned her, nor who has in-Bructed her; but if I had not took it up very warmly, the had ruined herself with her Nicety: + I'll tell you

how it is.

k-

0

or

y -

is

at

e?

ny.

n,

nd

e-

2-

no

ras

ıld

ot

10-

OII

OW

een

are

on,

eir

at

ind

ave er,

lit-

his

Sill. Well, Brother, you will allow me to be free with you: I must needs say, I think you are in the wrong.

Bro. Yes, yes; I expected that from you.

Sift. I speak my Experience, Brother; I would not force a Child's Inclination, in such a Case, for the Worlds

Bro. What do you mean by Inclination? She forces her own Inclination; for her Sifter fays, the loves the Gentleman, and has owned it; and yet upon this simple Nicety the pretended to cross herself, affront the Gentleman; and disoblige her Father.

Sift. And will not all that convince you then, that she acts by Strength of Judgment, and upon Principles of Conscience? If it be as you say, it is the noblest Resolution that ever I heard of, fince the Story of St. Catharine:

Here he tells her the whole Story of his Daughter and the Gentleman, to the Time of his coming from Home, he not knowing what had happened fince. Bro:

Bro. Don't tell me of your noble Resolutions, and your fine Principles: it is a first Principle, an original Command of God, that Children should obey their Parents.

Sift. Ay, Brother, where the Parent commands nothing that classes with the Laws of God; but then, Brother, our Authority ceases.

Bro. But I am fure this Match is for her Advantage,

and I'll make her have him.

sift. That's a severe Resolution, and if it be against her Conscience, you may fail in a you resolve upon; be-

fides, 'tis evident you ought not to refolve fo.

Bro. What! Am not I her Father? Has it not been also ways the Right of Fathers to give their Daughters in Marriage? Nay, to bargain for them, even without their Knowledge: Did not Caleb promise his Daughter Achsah in Marriage to him that should smite Kirjathseper, not knowing who it should be, or whether the Girl should like him, or no? And are there not many such Instances in the Scripture?

Sift. All this is true, Brother: But I dare not think the Laws of God or Man give Parents that Authority now.

Bro. Then you allow my Daughters to marry who they please, without putting any Weight upon my Consent one Way or t'other: Would you give your Daughters that Li-

berry ?

Sift. No, Brother, you wrong me; but there is a great Difference between your negative Authority and your positive Authority, in the Case of a Daughter; as there is a great Difference between your Authority in the Marriage of a Daughter and the Marriage of a Son.

Bro. I know my Lady Sister is a nice Civilian: Pray ex-

plain yourself.

Sift. I can take all your Banters patiently, Brother, and I will explain myself, contradict me if you can; I distinguish them thus: If your Daughter desires to marry any Person you do not like, I grant that you have Power by the Law of God to forbid her positively; The Scripture is plain, you have Power to dissolve even a Vow or Promise

H

Daughter is not willing to marry one you may like, I do not think you have the same Right to command; for you might then command her to marry a Person she may have an Abhorrence of, and an Aversion to, which could not be; the very Laws of Matrimony forbid it; she could not repeat the Office of Matrimony at her Marriage, viz. to love and bonour bim: and to promise what she knew at the same Time would be impossible for her to persorm, would be to perjure herse, (for the Marriage-Promise is a solemn Oath) and to deceive her Husband in the grossels Manner; neither of which would be lawful for her to do.

Bro. Well, well, for all your fine Harangue, I have

made her do it.

sift. Are they married then, Brother?

Bro. No; but they shall as soon as I come Home.

Sift. I wish her well; she is a Child that deserves very well, I am sure; she is a serious, sensible, religious Child, and will be an extraordinary Woman; but if you force her to marry, as you say you will, remember my Words, Brother, you will make her miserable, as I have been.

Bro. Yes, yes, fo she will; just so miserable; she will have a good Husband, and about 2000l. a Year Estate; a

very miserable Condition truly!

Sist. All that's nothing; nor will it lessen the Misery at all to a good Woman: I am sure she had better go to Service, or marry a good, sober, religious Shoemaker; and I would do so myself, if I had my Choice to make again: Therefore I say it again, dear Brother, remember my Words; if you do it, you make her miserable, and will repent it.

Bro. Nay, nay, I am not so positive neither; I would not ruin in Child, you may be sure; but I shall see when

I come Home.

.

K-

11

ſh

rhe is

ile

Sift. Pray let me hear how it goes, when you come Home.

Bro. So you shall, I promise you.

After this Discourse he stay'd but two or three Days

With his Sifter and then went Home: When he came Home, to be fure the first Question he ask'd of his eldest Daughter was, how Mr.--did? And if he was in the House?

Da. In the House? No, Sir, I think not. Fa. Why you think not? When was he here?

Da. Never, Sir, fince the Evening after you went away.

Fa. Why, she has not served me so, has she?

Da. Serv'd you, Sir! Nay, it is he has ferv'd you so; for he said, the last Time he was here, he would wait on her again; but he has never been here since.

Fa. Then she must have used him very ill, I am sure, he had never done so else; where is she? call her down,

Da. Sir, my Sister is gone to my Aunt---'s at Hampslead. Fa. Very well; finely managed I assure you! Well; I'll manage her, and all of you, if this be the Way I am to be used.

[He is in a great Passion.

Da. I believe there is nothing done to use you ill, Sir,

or to provoke you in the leaft.

Fa. What is she gone out of the House then for?

Da. Sir, you are so angry with her, when you talk with her, that you fright her; I was afraid, last Time you talk'd to her, you would have thrown her into Fits; and so we really all advis'd her to go Home with my Aunt last Week, when she was in Town, and stay there, till we could see what you will please to have her do.

Fa. Do! she knows what I expected she should do.

Da. As to marrying Mr---Sir, that the can never do; and she has talk'd to him so handsomely, that Sir, I assure you, he said himself he could not answer her Objections; that she had Reasons for what she did, and he could not urge it any farther.

Fa. Wby, did not you fay he promifed to come again?

Da. Yes, he did say he would wait on her again, but lie is gone into the Country, I hear.

Fa. Well, I'll say no more, till he comes again, then. Da. Nay, if he had come again, she had resolv'd, she would not have seen him.

Fa. Say you so! I'll be as positive as she; if she will

fee him no more, the shall fee me no more, I'll let her know so much.

Da. I am forry Things are so; but I am sure she will never see him, if she never comes Home more.

Fa. I'll try that: I'll go over to Hampstead in the

Morning, I'll fee what I can do with her.

Her Sister was now in as great a Fright as before; she knew the Principle her Sister went upon was good, and she was very loth to have her thrust by Violence into a Sate of Life she so abhorr'd; and this made her take more Freedom with her Father than she would have done, and took more Care of her Sister too, lest her Father should bring her away and marry her by Force; so she sent a a Man and Horse away the same Night to Hampstead to her Sister, to give her Notice of her Father's Resolution to come over in the Morning, and giving her an Account of what had pass'd, advising her to be gone out of his Way somewhere else.

As the young Lady had acquainted her Aunt with the whole Story, her Aunt was so affected with it, and so abundantly justify'd her Conduct in it, that upon this News, she told her, she would place her at a Friend's House a little Way off, and she would undertake to talk to her Father when he came; and if she could not bring him to any Reason, she would send her the next Day into the Country to her other Aunt, the Widow of Sir James----; so she sent her away in the mean Time in her own Coach to Hendon, a Village beyond Hampstead, with a Maid and a Footman to attend her, till her Father was gone.

In the Morning (as be faid be would) her Father came to Hampstead, and as soon as he had salured his Sister, he asks for his Daughter; his Sister told him, she was gone a little Way to visit a Friend of her's, but desir-

ed him to fit down.

5;

t

16

ill

She saw he was-disturb'd and uneasy; Come Brother, says she, be calm and moderate, and do not treat your Child.

F 2 with

with So much Warmth; let you and I talk of this Matter; my Niece has given me a full Account of the whole Story.

Fa. Has the fo? But the shall give me another Ac-

count of it, before the and I have done yet.

Sist. I find, Brother, you consult your Passions only in all this Matter, and I must tell you, they are base Counsellors; I wish you would act in cool Blood, and consult your Reason a little too.

Bro. So I think I do; and I won't be instructed by my

Children.

sist. No, no, Brother, it is evident you act too violently; if you consulted your Reason, I am sure it would tell you, that you are all wrong: Did ever a Father hurry, and terrify his Children so with his Fury and his Passions, that they are afraid to see him, and ready to swoon when they hear he is coming to them; and then do you consider what a Child this is, that you use thus?

Bro. I use her! she uses me I think! and abuses me too.
Sist. Be patient, Brother, be patient; Passion, I tell you,
is an ill Counsellor; consider the Circumstances of your

Child, and hear what the has to fay.

Bro. What do you mean by Hearing? I think she ha'n't heard what I have to say, when she slies thus from Place

to Place, as if the was a Thief.

Sift. That's because you do not act like a Christian, Brother; you make yourself a Terror to your Children; this dares not see you; those at Home dare not speak to you: Why, what do you mean, Brother, You did not treat them thus when they were little: Do you consider what they are now? That they are Women grown, and ought to be treated as such? And deserving Women too they are, that the World sees; and you expose yourself most wretchedly to treat them thus: I am very free with you.

Bro. How do 1 treat them? What, to provide a Gentleman of 2000l. a Year for the youngest, a handsome compleat young Gentleman as any the Town can produce, and

every

every way unexceptionable; nay, she own'd herself he was one she could like very well; and to have her affront him and her Father, and to dismis him of her own Head without consulting me, or staying till I came to Town and this after five Weeks keeping him Company, and when she knew the Writings were drawn for her Marriage-Settlement; is this a decent Way of treating a Father? I think you are free with me indeed, to take their Parts in it.

Sift. Well; Brother, suppose all this to be just as you relate it, yet if the young People could not hit it, do we not always, when we make Proposals one to another for our Children, make this Condition, viz. If the young People can agree? And do we not put them together to talk with one another, on purpose that they may be acquainted and see whether they can like one another, or no?

Bro. Well, and so did I: Has he not waited upon her Ladiship, I tell you, sive Weeks? Was not that Time e-

rough to know, whether the lik'd him, or no?

Sift. Time enough to like or dislike, I grant it; and she tells you plainly, she does not like, and cannot marry him: What would you have? And as to putting him off in your Absence, she says, she told you her Mind positively before you went out of Town, and would have given you her Reasons for it; but you treated her with so little Temper, that she had no Room to speak; and at last told her you would have none of her Reasons, but expected she should have him: How do you answer that pray?

Bro. I knew what she had to say well enough; however, I gave her till my Return to consider of it: What had she to do to turn him off without my Knowledge, and affront a Gentleman of his Quality? It is an Insult upon

her Father, and a Scandal to the whole Family.

Sist. That's all answer'd by what I said before, That she told you positively, before you went out of Town, she would never have him, and indeed had resolv'd then to see him no more; for what should a young Woman keep

Man Company for, when she resolves not to have him? Whatever you may think, Brother, it would not have been very handsome on her Side; besides, I can assure you, your Daughters are none of those Women that do any thing unbecoming.

Bro. Why, she did keep him Company after it, for all that. Sift. Never but once, that she might dismiss him civilly,

and that was merely a Force of your own upon her, because your Passion with her obliged her to do that Work herself, which you ought to have done for her.

Bro. Well, she's an undutiful, disrespectful Creature to me; I ha'n't been an unkind Father to her; But I'll

let her know herfelf my own Way.

sift. You'll consider of that, Brother, when your Passion is over.

Bro. Not I; I am no more in a Passion now, than I was

before.

Sift. That may well be indeed; because you were then in such a Passion, it seems, as disorder'd all your Family: Is Passion a proper Weapon to manage Children with, Brother?

Bro. It is impossible for any Man to be thus treated by his Children, and not be in a Passion: Ingratitude is a

Thing no Man can bear with Patience.

For it is possible you may be in the Wrong as well as your Children; and take this with you for a Rule in all such Breaches, That generally those that are in the greatest Passion, are most in the Wrong.

Bro. No, no; I am fure I am not in the Wrong.

Sift. That's making yourfelf Judge, Brother; I think you should let some judicious, sober, impartial Person hear your Child, since you won't hear her yourself.

Bro. What, do you think I'll have Arbitrators between

me and my Children?

sift. I hope you will act the Father with them, then, and not the Madman, as (I must be plain with you) I think you do now.

Bro.

act

Re

to

We

YO

all

re

pu

Cr

of

to

yo

no

ha

fpi

th

kn

10

H

br

ar

Bro. Yes, yes, I'll act the Father with them, while they

act the part of Children with me, but no longer.

Sift. If God should deal so by us all, what would become of us? Think of that, Brother, when you make Resolutions against your own Children; and without just Cause too.

Bro. Why, you won't pretend this is without Cause? Sist. Truly, Brother, I do not see any Cause you have to be offended with your Child; it is true, you brought a very fine young Gentleman to court her, and I know you were pleased with the Thoughts of such an Alliance in your Family; his Estate, his Person, his Character, were all pleasing; but here's the Case, your Daughter has been religiously and virtuously educated by my Sister.

Bro. By your Sifter only, I suppose; you might have

put that in too.

Sist. Truly, Brother, I do not charge you with the Crime of being any way concern'd in the religious Part of their Education.

Bro. Did I obstruct it, or blame her for it? I left them

to her; it was none of my Bufiness.

Sist. That's a sad Way of discharging your Duty to your Children, Brother, in their Education: But that's none of my Business; we will leave that now; they have been soberly and religiously educated, whoever did it; and they are very sober, religious young Women, especially this youngest above them all; they are an Homour to your Family, and to the Memory of my Sister their Mother.

Bro, But none to me, I confess that.

sift. They will be so to you too in the End, if you know how to make yourself an Honour to them.

Bro. Well, I'll make them fear me, if they won't ho-

nour me.

Sift. You are hardly in Temper enough to talk to: However, let me go on; I tell you, they have been fo bred, and they fo well answer their Education, that they are an Honour to your Family; their Mother instill derinciples

Principles of Virtue, Piety, and Modelty in their Minds,

Bro. Well, I know all this

Sist. Pray be patient; among the rest, this was one, I hat a religious Life was the only Heaven upon Earth; they were her very Words: That Honour, Estate, Religion, and all human Pleasures, had no Relish without it, and neither pointed to a future Felicity, or gave any present, at least that was solid and valuable; and on her Death-bed she caution'd them never to marry any Man, that did not at least profess to own Religion, and acknowledge the God that made him, whatever Fortunes or Advantages might offer, as to this World.

f

fo

h

tr

ti

el

cl

h

fo

B

fu

th

Wi

Wi

W Pa

wi

it

Bro She might have found fomething elfe to do, when

the was just at her End, I think.

Sist. Brother, let me be free with you; she had two bad Examples to set before them, where the Want of a religious Husband had made two Families very miserable, tho they had every Thing else that the World could give;

and one was your own Sifter.

Bro. And the other herself; I understand you, Sister, Sist. Be that, as the Sense of your own Conduct directs you to think, Brother; that's none of my Business; she was my Sister, and therefore I say no more of that. But these are all Digressions: The young Women, your Daughters, thus instructed, and thus religiously inclin'd, are grown up; you bring a Gentleman to court one of them, who, with all the Advantages his Person and Circumstances present, yet wants the main Thing which she looks for in a Husband; and without which she declares she will not marry, no, not if a Peer of the Realm courted her: Pray, what have you to say to such a Resolution, that you should oppose it?

Bro. How does the know who is religious, and who not! She may be cheated foonest, where the expects it

leaft.

sift. That's true; and she has the more Need to have

her Father's Affistance to judge with, and affist her in her Choice.

Bro. I don't enquire into that Part, not I.

sist. No, I perceive you don't; she has therefore the more Reason to look to herself.

Bro. This Gentleman may be as religious as any body, for aught she knows: How can she pretend to know, I

fay, who is religious?

8,

e,

1-

t,

e-

er

n,

W-

de

en

ad

gi-

e;

er,

was

ele

ers,

ho,

re-

in a

not

ray,

who it

1avç

who is; but this Gentleman has been so kind to her, and so honest, as to put it out of all Doubt, it seems: For he has frankly owned to her, that, as to Religion, he never troubled his Head about it; that 'tis a Road he never travell'd; he makes a Jest of it all, as most young Gentlemen now, a-days do; tells her, that his Business is to chuse a Wife first, and then, perhaps, he may chuse his Religion, and the like: Is this the Gentleman you would have your Daughter marry? Brother! Is this your Care for your Child! Is it for refusing such a Man as this, that you are in a Passion with your Child! I blush for you, Brother! I intreat you, consider what you are doing.

Bro. I will never believe one Word of all this; I am

fure it can't be true.

Sift. I am fatisfy'd, every Word of it is true, and you may inform yourself from your other Children, if you think it worth your while.

Bro. I'll believe none of them.

Sist. Not while you are in this Rage, I believe you will not; for Passion is as deaf as 'tis blind; but if you will cool your Warmth, and let your Reason return to its Exercise, and to its just Dominion in your Soul, then you will hear and believe too: For when we are calm, and our Passions laid, 'tis easy to judge by the very telling a Story, whether it be true or no; but it is not to my Argument, whether it be true or not.

Bro. No! Pray what is your Argument then?

Sist. Why this, whether you are not in the wrong, if it is true.

Bro.

Bro. In the wrong! in what, pray?

Sift. Why, to treat your Child with such Fury and ungovern'd Passion as you do.

Bro. Why, how must Children be treated, when they

fa

th

ar

CE

ar

th

Be

S

g

th

at

C

te

th

de

fe

b

h

II

D

Ь

h

1

are infolent and disobedient?

Sift. Even then, not with Passion and Heat, Brother: There is no Case in the World, that can possibly happen, which ought to make a Father act in a Passion, with his own Children.

Bro. No! how must be correct them then, when they

do evil Things?

sift. All with Calmness and Affection, Brother; not with Rage and Fury; that is not correcting them, that is fighting with them; he must pity when he punishes, exhort when he corrects; he should have the Rod in his Hand, and Tears in his Eyes; he is to be angry at their Offences, but not with their Persons; The Nature of Correction implies all this; 'tis for the Child's Good that a Parent corrects, not for his own Pleasure; he must be a Brute that can take Pleasure in whipping a Child *.

Bro. Well, I am not a correcting my Children now,

they are past that.

sist. Yes, yes, Brother, you are correcting now too; there are more Ways of Correction, than the Rod and the Cane; when Children are grown up, the Father's Frowns are a Part of Correction, his just Reproaches are worse than Blows; and Passion should be no more concern'd in that Part, than in the other.

Bro. These are fine-spun Notions; but, What is all

this to the Case in Hand?

Sist. Why yes, 'tis all to the Case in Hand; I am sorry there is so close an Application to be made of it: For if we are not to be in a Passion with our Children, even when we have just Reason to correct them, and see Cause to be displeased with them, sure we must not be in a Passion

^{*} He fate filent here a good while, and faid not a Word, his Confeience convincing him that she was in the right; at length he puts it off thus.

with them, when there is no Cause for Displeasure; I say, Displeasure, for Cause of Passion with our Children there can never be; all Passion is a Sin, and to fin, because our Children sin, can never be our Duty, nor any Means to shew them theirs.

Bro. Does not the Scripture say, Be angry, and sin not? Sist. If you would read that Scripture according to its genuine Intrepretation, it would help to convince you of all I have said: Be angry, but be not in a Passion; to be angry may be just, as the Occasion for it may make it necessary; but be not immoderately angry, for that is to sin, and no Cause of Anger can make that necessary; and therefore another Text says, Let all Bitterness and Wrath be put away from among you, Eph. iv. 13. These are Scriptures, Brother, for our Conduct even with Strangers; but when we come to talk of Children, 'tis ten thousand times more binding; we cannot be in a Passion at any body without Sin; but to be in a Passion at our Children, that's all Distraction, and an Abomination, and tends to nothing but Mischies.

Bro. You are a healing Preacher, Sister; I confess, there is some Weight in what you say; but what can I

do, when Children are thus provoking?

sift. Do! go home and consider the Case maturely, and pray to God to direct you to your Duty; if you did that seriously, you would soon see that your Child is not to blame, and that you are very much in the wrong to press her in a Thing of this Nature.

Bro. Nay, nay, don't say so neither; you may say I am in the wrong to be so angry, but you cannot say I am

not very ill used; that I am positive in.

Sist. Let me hear you say so when with Temper and Calmness you have heard the whole Case; if you will not bear to hear it from your Daughter herself, hear it from her Sister; and be composed and impartial, and then I shall see, you will be of another Mind.

Bro. I can't promise you I can have so much Patience

with them.

and

ney

er:

en,

ith

ley

not

t is

ex-

his

eir

or-

hat

uft

*.

W,

ere

ie;

e a

nan

hat

all

rry

if

ren

use

on

his

gth.

Sift.

Sig. Well, till you can, you can't lay you are doing the Duty of a Father.

Here the Discourse ended, and he goes home again; and the young Lady, thinking she had some Encouragement from this Discourse to hope that he would be calmer with her, went home too in the Asternoon, and took care to let her Father know it, and see her in the House; however, he took little Notice of her for some Time.

The next Morning he called his eldest Daughter to him, and began another Discourse with her upon the Af-

fair, thus :

Come Child, fays the Father, now Passion is a little over; and I am disposed, however ill I am used, to bear it as well as I can; pray give me a true Account of this foolish Girl, your Sister, and how she has manag'd herfelf since I have been gone.

Da. What, about Mr .---. Sir.

Fa. Ay, ay; was ever any Wench so mad, to affront such a Gentleman as he was? I wish he had pitch'd upon you, my Dear.

Da. It is my Mercy, Sir, he did not; and I defire to

be thankful for it as long as I live.

Fa. What do you mean by that, Child?

Da. Because I have not been forced to disoblige my Father, or to marry against my Mind, as my Sister has been; two Things I know not which are most terrible to me so much as to think of.

Fa. Why, you would not have been such a Fool to have run into these Scruples too, would you? I have a

better Opinion of your Senfe.

Da. I defire your good Opinion of me may always continue; and therefore, Sir, as I am not tried, I hope you will not put a Question to me, that 'tis not so proper for me to answer.

Fa. Well, well, be easy, Child, I have a religious Man in my Eye for you, I assure you; we will have no need of such toolish Bassaches on Town A towns.

of such toolish Breaches on your Account.

Da.

lef

and

de

no

H

for

ple

Bu

of

of

fur

he

be

fan

of

áno

not

ent

bot

DO

har

Wo

fhe

tis

and

Th

do

giv

Da. It is Time enough, Sir, to talk of that.

g

14

k

to

f.

0-

it

is

r-

nt

on

to

ny

123

to

to

2

1XS

pe

ocr

an

ed

Fa. Well then, as to your Sifter: You know, when I left her, I charg'd her to entertain him till my Return, and you know what Resolutions I made if the did not.

Da. Dear Father, you went away in a Passion; she had declared positively she would not have him, and she could not think of entertaining a Gentleman, after the had refolved not to have him; it would not have been handsome; However, I did over-perfuade her to fee him that Night you went away; in hopes, truly, that the might have had some Opportunity to be better satisfied in her main Scruple about Religion, and that the might have got it over: But on the contrary, he made fuch an open Declaration of his Contempt of all Religion, and his perfect Ignorance of any thing about it, that I could not but wonder at it; fure he must think we were a Family of Atheists, or else he did it to affront her; for he could never think it could be agreeable to any of us: And upon this the made the fame open Declaration to him, that the could never think of joining herself to a Man so perfectly void of Principles; and so they parted, as it were, by Agreement.

Fd. Was it so short between them then?

Da. No. Sir, there was a great deal more; they did not part with Difgust at all; I am persuaded he loves her entirely, and I am sure she loves him too; I wish she did not.

Fa. And is the not a double Fool then, to thwart thus both her Fortune and her Fancy, and all for the knows not what? Had he been a fawning Hypocrite, that could have talked of Religion, whether he had any or no, the would have taken him.

Da. She would not have been easily deceived, Sir, for the lays the whole Stress of her Life's Welfare upon it; it is a solid Principle with her, which she cannot go from, and which she thinks her Fancy and Fortune, and all Things in this World ought to submit to.

Fa. Well, but you say it was a long Discourse; I don't doubt but you have heard it all, over and over: Pray give me as full an Account of it, Child, as you can.

Da.

Da. Yes. Sir.*

Fa. Well, I think they are both Fools; he for being so open, and she for being so nice; it will be long enough

before the has such another Offer, I dare say.

Da. I believe that is none of her Affliction, Sir; she's only troubled at her disabliging you, which she had no Possibility to avoid, without oppressing her Conscience, and making herself miserable.

Fa. I do not see that's any of her Concern.

Da. Yes, indeed, Sir, it is; and I am afraid she will grieve herself to Death about it.

Fa. If that had been any Grief to her, she would not

have acted as she has done.

Da. It is a terrible Case, Sir, to have so many powerful Arguments press against Conscience; I wonder she has been able to stand her Ground against them, and I am fure it lies very heavy upon her Mind.

Fa. What do you mean by Arguments preffing upon

her Conscience?

Da. Why, Sir, to name no more, here is a Gentleman, who by his professed Choice of her, and extraordinary Proposals to her, has given undoubted Testimony of his loving her very sincerely: In the next place, a splendid Fortune, giving her a Prospect of enjoying all that this World can offer: Thirdly, a very agreeable Person, and one that has by his engaging Conduct, made some Way into her Affections; so that 'tis easy to see, she not only has a Respect for him, but really loves him; and lastly, The Displeasure of her Father, who she never disobey'd before, and to disoblige whom is effectually to ruin herself for this World. Are not these, Sir, pressing Things?

Fa. And why do not they prevail with her then? And

why is the fo wilful?

Da. Nothing but her Conscience; a Sense of her Du-

^{*} Here she relates the whole Night's Discourse between the Gentleman and her Sister, as it is in the foregoing Dialogue, except only that about staying for him till he was grown religious.

ty to God, and her own future Peace, has upheld her Red folution: he has professed himself to be a Man of no Realigion, and such a one she dares not marry.

Fa. I understand nothing of it, nor do I see any need to pretend Conscience in the Case at all; there's nothing

of Weight in it.

e's

nď

nd

vill

not

er-

fhe

am

pon

nan,

ary

his

this

and

in-

has

The

be-

rfelf

And

Du-

n the

ogue,

TOWN

3 ?

Da. I hope you cannot think, but my Sister would be

yery glad it had been otherwise.

Fa. What need she trouble herself about his Religion!
Da. It is my Business, Sir, to give you an Account of the Facts, not to enter into the Argument; 'tis enough that one Daughter has displeased you already.

Fa. Well, well; I see she is come Home again: I have nothing to say to her; I don't look upon her as any Re-

lation of mine.

Da. If you don't abate fomething, Sir, and shew yourfelf a little tender of her, I believe you will soon have but two Daughters to provide for; perhaps not that, for I think it will break all our Hearts to see it.

All that his eldest Daughter could say, or that either of his Sisters in the Country had faid, had yet no Effect tpon him; but he carried it so reserved to his Daughter, that she appeared in the Family as if she had not belonged to him, and he continued it fo long, that it began to be very probable he would never alter it; which fo grieved the poor young Lady, that the fell very fick with it, and it was feared the inclined to a Confumption; and being very ill one Day, her Sifter, who was her fast Friend and only Comforter, defired the would go out a little, and take the Air: So they refolved to go to their Aunt's at Hampstead; the Sifter's Design being to persuade her to stay two or three Days with their Aunt; in which short Journey, several strange like Adventures befel them, which will gradually introduce themselves in the following Discourse, which began between them as they were in the Coach going to Hampstead.

Dear Sister, says the eldest Sister, what will become of

you? Will you give way to this Grief so much, as to let

it destroy you?

Yo. Sift. What can I do, Sifter, I support it as well as I can, but it sinks my Spirits; 'tis too heavy for me; I believe it will destroy me, as you say.

Eld. Sift. But shake it off then, Sister.

To. Sift. Shake it off! You talk of it as a Thing in my Power: No, no, Sifter, Effects rarely cease till their Causes are removed.

Eld. Sift. Nay, you would talk Philosophy, I am sure

Philosophy would cure you.

Yo. Sift. Ay; but I am no Philosopher, I hope: pray

how would that cure me?

Eld Sist. How that I mean by Philosophy is Reason; tho' Women are not Philosophers, they are rational Creatures: I think you might reason yourself out of it.

To Sift. I do talk Reason, when I say, Grief having seized upon my Spirits, and the Cause being immoveable, while that remains so, the Effect will be so too.

Eld. Sift. It is not in my Power to remove the Cause; but yet. I think if you would hear Reason, you might remove the Grief, which is the Effect.

Yo. Sift. And you think Reasoning would do it? Pray

what kind of Reasoning is that?

Eld. Sist. Why, to Reason but upon the Folly, the Madness, the Injustice, nay, the Sin of immoderate Grief.

To Sist. You begin warmly; pray lets hear the Folly of it. Eld Sist. Why several Things will convince you of its being the foolishest Thing in the World: Grief is a senseles, useless Passion; 'tis useless, because 'tis perfectly incapable of doing any Good, and only capable of doing Evil: Grief is indeed no Passion, but a Quality, a Disease of the Mind, which must be cured; 'tis an evil Spirit that must be cast out: Besides, it is a senseless Thing: for 'tis a Means to no End; it aims at nothing, seeks nothing, endeavours nothing, only corrodes the Spirits, stagnates the very Senses, and stupisies the Soul; and therefore Grief was anciently represented as a Viper, generated in the Li-

ver, and preying upon the Vitals of the Man; and when it came within a certain Space of the Heart, it had two Ways to go; if it ascended, it quitted the hypochondriack Vessels, and so possessing the Brain, ended in Madness; if it descended, it possesses the Blood, and ended in Death.

To sift. Pray end your Reasoning; for I do not understand it; go back to the Point proposed, what must I do? You say, shake it off; I ask, what must I do to shake it

off? How can I shake it off?

Eld. sist. Why, divert your Mind, think no more of him; turn your Thoughts to Things that are in Being, this is now a Thing over; you should only esteem it as a History of Things done in the Ages past.

Yo. Sift. You surprize me, Sister.

Eld. Sift. Surprize you, Child! in what?

To Sift. I am both grieved and aftonshied, that you should have such mean Thoughts of me, as to think my Grief is founded upon the parting with Mr. I protest to you, I am so far from having the least Concern of that Kind upon me, that it is the only comfortable Reslexion I have in the World, and I give God Thanks from the Bottom of my Soul, as often as I think of it, that I am delivered from him.

Eld. Sift. I believe you are fensible, that it is better as it is; but I know it is a great Struggle between Principle.

and Affection.

y

d

it.

its

2

tly

E-

he

uft

3

ng,

the

rief LiTo. sift. Not at all, Sister, I am over all that; it did not hold me half an Hour; when my Conscience distated to me my real Danger, the future Felicity of my Life, the Commands of God, and the dying Instructions of my dear Mother: Do you think the little Stirrings of an Infant-Affection to the Man, was able to struggle with such an Army of Convictions? God forbid! no, no; he is to me as the most contemptible Fellow on Earth.

Eld. sift. No, no, Sifter, you never thought him a contemptible Fellow. I am fure; nor is he so in himself.

Yo. Sift. No, as a Gentleman he is not so; he is a love.

ly Creature, and the only Man in the World I could ever

fay I had any Affection for.

Eld. Sist. I know you loved him; nay, and do love him still; your Face betrays you; Sister; while your Tongue named him, your Heart, stuttered and your Colour chang-

ed; I could fee it plain enough.

To. sist. How cruel is that now, Sister! you prompt the Assection to revive, as if you would recall the Temptation, and assist in it a new Attack upon me: I allow I loved him, and as a Gentleman so every. Way agreeable, I do so still; but shall I yoke myself with one of God's Enemies! embrace one that God abhors! speak no more of it, I entreat you.

Eld. Sift. That's carrying it too far; you cannot fay

who God abhors.

Yo. Sift. I'll put it the other Way then, to stop your Mouth: shall I yoke myself with a practical Atheist! embrace one that rejects God, love him that hates my Saviour!

Eld. Sift. Nay, that's too far too; he told you he did

not hate Religion.

To. Sift. You cavil, Sister; you don't argue; I'll give it you in Scripture Words; is he not one of those who say to the Almighty, Depart form us, we desire not the Knowledge of his Ways? Did he not openly say the same Thing; is he not only viod of the Knowledge of Religion, but of any Desire to have any Knowledge of it?

Eld. Sift. Do not take what I faid ill, Sifter, I acknowledge he is indeed fuch a one; but still you love him, Sifter.

To. Sist. No, Sister, as such I abhor him; the Thoughts of having been but in danger of him, make my Blood run chill in my Veins; shall I marry a Profligate! a Man of no Religion! nay, that has the Impudence to own it! No, Sister, I rejoice that I am delivered from him, and I never desire to see him more as long as I live.

Eld. Sift. And are you really got as far above it as

you fay you are?

To. sift. Dear Sister, have not you and I often lamented the Loss of a religious Family, even in our own Fa-

ther!

ther? the Want of a religious Conversation, the Want of a Father to teach, instruct, inform and explain religious Things to us? Have we not seen the dreadful Life our Aunt, my Father's Sister, lived for want of a religious Husband, and the heavenly Life my Aunt here, our Mother's Sister lives, that has a pious, sober, religious Husband and Family? And can you think I would ever be a Wife to such another as Sir James! Besides, could I bear to be tied to a Man that could not pray to God for me, and would not pray to God with me! God forbid! the greatest Estate and finest Man in the World should never incline me to such a Thought; I thank God my Soul abhors it; and 'tis the Joy of my Heart, that the Snare is broken.

Eld. Sift. Why, what is it then that oppresses your

Mind thus?

n

I

13

To. sift. O Sister! you cannot ask me such a Question,

Just as she said these Words, came a Gentleman on Horseback, and gallop'd by the Coach-Side, and looking into the Coach, pulled off his Hat to her; and having paid his Compliments, he rode on: The very Moment he looked in, the eldest Sister had dropped her Fan in the Charior, and was stooping down to reach it, and so did not see him; but when she got up, looking at her Sister, she found her look very pale.

Eld. Sift. What's the matter, Sifter, (Jays she, being much

frighted) an't you well?

Yo. Sift. No, fays she; lend me your * Bottle?

Eld. Sift. What was the Matter, Sifter, was you frighted?

Yo. Sift. I was a little disordered.

Eld. Sift. What was it? Did those Men that rid by say any Thing to affront you?

Yo. Sift. One of them did: Did you not fee them?

Eld. Sift. No; I heard fomebody ride by, but my

Head

^{*} She gives her a little Bottle to fmell to, and she began to come to herself.

Head was down, looking for my Fan: Why who was it?
Twas not Mr-----was it?

To. Sift. O! yes, is was: let us go back, Sifter, I en-

treat you; I am very ill.

Eld. Sift. Why we have a long Way back, and we are almost at Hampstead now; we had better go to my Aunt's; we shall be there presently.

Yo. Sift. Well, let us then, bid him drive apace. Eld. Sift. Alas! there he is * a little before us.

Yo. Sift. If he comes again to the Coach Side, and offers to speak, I beg of you, Sister, do you answer him, for I will not speak one Word to him.

Eld. Sift. + He is gone now a great way off.

They foon came to their Aunt's House, and went in, the Coach standing at the Door: After they had been there a Quarter of an Hour, the Gentleman, who knew well enough where they were, came to the House, and fent in their Footman to tell the eldest Sister he was there, and desired the Favour to speak two or three Words with her.

The Servants led him into the Parlour, and the young Lady came down to him in a few Minutes; he told her, that before he entered into any Discourse, he must assure

her of two Things: First,

That his overtaking them upon the Road was purely accidental, and without the least Design, as she might easily be satisfied by his Servants and Bagage; for he was just setting out on a Journey of above an hundred Miles, and should not return under three Weeks at least: And, secondly, That he had no Design in calling in there, to move any Thing to her Sister concerning the old Affair, but only to have two or three Words with her relating

She looks out of the Coach again,

^{*} She calls to the Coachman to drive apace, and looking out of the Coach, she saw the Gentleman riding foftly with only two Footmen, a little Way off, of the Coach.

to himself. Yo Know, Sister, fays he, for I must still give you that Name of Respect, upon what Terms your Sifter and I parted; and as I promifed her I would wait on her again, and did not, I have been very uneafy left, the might think I thewed her fome Difrespect, and that I took ill what the faid to me: and truly for fome Time fo I did. She answered coldly, That she believed her Sister had not at all been diffatisfied at his not coming again. No, Madam, fays he, I believe that, by the Manner of the Dismiss the had given me; but however I would not be rude to her, whatever she thought fit to say to me. She returned, and with a little more concern than before, that the hoped, however, her Sifter had thought fit not to go on with what was proposed, yet that she had not been rude to him. No. Madam, fays he, not rude. Sir, fays the, as you bad offered nothing to my Sifter, but what was like yourself, very bonourable, I am fure she does not so ill understand herself as to offer any Thing unbecoming to you. He returned, with a very obliging Way of Speaking, that her Sister understood herself perfectly well: and I affure you, Jays be, she understood my Character better than I did myself. 'I do not rightly take your Meaning, Sir, fays she, my Sister could make no Objection to your Character.' Madam: faid he, you know very well upon what Foundation your Sifter altered her Mind, and absolutely refused any farther Treaty with me, viz. That I was a prophane, wicked, irreligious Creature: The Fact was true, I owned it to her that I neither had any Knowledge of Religion, or defired any, for which I was a very great Brute.

'I think you were not very fincere, Sir (fays she.)

O Madam, (says he,) I do not say, I was a Brute for owning it, but I was a Brute for living in that horrid Manner, and yet thinking that any sober Woman could entertain a Thought of having me.

I am very forry, said the Lady, it happened fo.

I am very glad, Madam, that she treated me so, replied be, and should love her ten thousand Times better for it, if that be possible, than ever I did before,

G 4

Says

Says the to him again, Sir, you are pleased to banter a little.

No, Sifter, fays he, I don't banter; and my stopping to speak with you was for this Reason; I do not ask to fpeak with your Sifter, but I beg you will tell her from me very feriously, that she has been a better Instructor to me than my Father or Mother, or all the Tutors and Friends I had in my Life; the has convinced me that I was a Monster, a scandalous Fellow, that ought to have been ashamed to pretend to a Woman that had the least Sense of her Education, or of Him that made her: I have reason to give Thanks to God every Day I live, that ever I faw her Face, and that I had that Repulse from her: Tell her, I recommend it to her, to preserve that noble heavenly Resolution, which she said she had taken up, viz. Never to marry any but a religious Man. She is undone if the breaks it; and tho' I am never able to deferve her, yet I will always think of her as the Mother of all that is or ever will be good in me, and value the Memory of her accordingly! He waited no Answer, but with all posfibly Civility took his Leave, and his Horses being at the Door, took Horse and went away. She waited on him, to the Door, and as he was paying his Respects to her, fitting on his Horse, he said to her, Dear Madam, I hope you will give your Sifter a particular Account of what I have faid to you: She answerd, she would not fail to do it with all the Exactness possible.

As foon as the was gone, the run up to her Sister, but before the could speak to her, the youngest Sister cryed out to her, Sister, before you speak, do not ask me to go down;

for I will not fee him.

Eld. sift. Don't be so hasty, he did not desire to see you, he's gone.

To. Sift. Is he gone *?

h

h

1

a

1

^{*} She observed, for all she was so warm at first, that when she said, he did not desire to see her, she changed her Countenance a little, and more when she said, he was gone.

Eld. Sift. Truly Sister I don't think 'tis sit you should see him: I see by you, if he was to talk one Hour with you, you'd lose all your Resolution.

Yo. Sift. Perhaps that's the Reason why I resolve not to see him; won't you allow me to know my own Weakness? Is it not enough that I have conquered myself once?

Eld. Sift. Yes, I allow it; and that you act a very prudent Part; for I know you struggle with your own Affections; I do not desire to press you, and never did.

Yo. Sift. I can better keep my Resolution of not seeing him, than perhaps I might my Resolution of not marrying him, if I saw him; though I know I am ruined if I have him.

Eld. Sift. As he is now, I don't know whether you would or no; there's a strange Alteration in him.

To. Sift. What do you mean by an Alteration?

Eld. Sift. Why, he is quite another Man? he talks like a Man quite changed; you would have been surprized at him.

No no, it is too late now.

Eld. Sift. What Trick do you mean?

To Sift. O! he told me he could play the Hypocrite most nicely, and was sure he could deceive me; but it won't do; I am prepared for that.

Eld. Sift. I am fure he was no Hypocrite before, he was too plain before; and I do not fee why you should

fay he's a Hypocrite now.

Yo. Sift. Because he told me he would be so; he acknowledged he had shown more Honesty than Discretion before, and was sorry for it; and that if he was to begin again, he would take just the contrary Course.

Eld. Sift. Well, I dare fay, he is no Hypocrite now,

any more than he was before.

ro. Sift. I won't trust him.

Eld. Sift. But you may give me leave to tell the Sub-flance of his Discourse.

ro. Sift. Dear Sister, do not be drawn in to lay Snares

for me; you would not be willing to have me deceived. why should you affist in it? I desire to hear nothing of it.

Eld. Sift. That's very disobliging, Sifter, to me; would I affift any Man to deceive you, that have fo much applaud.

tl

th

to

ill

he

W

fo

an

μр

DIC

to

tha

ter

his

fol fho

his

Eld.

ed your Resolution not to be deceived?

ro. Sift, Nay, and affifted me too in withstanding the Importunities of my own Affections, or else I believe I had not been able to have supported my Sense of Duty; and therefore I wonder you should forfake me now.

Aunt. Child, do not press your Sister to hear any thing: I must confess her Case is wonderful nice; she loves the Gentleman, the does not flick to acknowledge it; the has great Scruples on her Thoughts about her Duty to her Father, and they all sway on the same Side; her Father frights her with violent Words, and hard Usage, and Threatnings of turning her out of Doors; against all this the flands fingle in Obedience to her Conscience; I think we should affist her.

Eld. Sift. Dear Madam, if my Sister was not here, I would fay a great deal more; I think the has afted the noblest Part in its Kind, that any young Body ever did; I wish I may be able to preserve such a Resolution, if ever it should be my Case; and I am sure I should be far from discouraging her; but what I was going to tell her, was nothing to discourage her; I wish she would let me tell

it you first,

ro. Sift. With all my Heart, tell it my Aunt; I'll *

withdraw.

Aunt. Well, Niece, I do think of the two it may be still better not to tell it your Sister; let us lay it up in our Hearts; if it be true, and he is a reformed Man, we shall perhaps hear more of him; if not, to persuade her he is really chang'd, is but to make her love him more, without knowing whether he ever thinks any more of her or no, and that can be no Service to her,

^{*} She goes out of the Room, and the eldeft Sifter tells her Aunt what the Gentleman had faid,

Eld. sift. I fubmit, Madam, to your Directions, but then I break my Promife.

Aunt. You may find a Pime for that too.

The Discourse broke off here, and her Aunt sinding the young Lady very ill and disturb'd, desired her Sister to leave her there for a few Days, to tell her Father, how ill she was, and that we thought the Country might divert her a little; but that if he desired her to come Home, she would return whenever he pleased: Her eldest Sister did so, but all the Answer she got was, 'She might stay there for ever, if she would, he never desired to be troubled; with her any more.'

The End of the Third Dialogue.

MENTER THE STATE OF THE STATE O

DIALOGUE IV.

HE former Dialogue having put an End to the Courtship between the Gentleman and his Mistress for the present, and there being some Interval of Time between those Things and the remaining Part of the Story, that Interval is filled up with another little Assair in the same Family of still a nicer Nature than the other, the not carried so far.

The Father had frequently discoursed these Things with his eldest Daughter, in the Case of her Sister, as is to be seen in the last Dialogue, and sound, by her Discourse, that she was pretty much of her Sister's Mind, in the Matter of chusing a Husband: But, having a Gentleman in his Thoughts for her, who had the Character of a very sober, religious Person, he made no Question but he should dispose his Daughter, both to her Satisfaction, and his own.

It was with a View to this Defign, that he had jeffed with

with her, in one of these last Discourses, that he had a religious Husband in store for her, and that he hoped he should give her no Occasion to play the Fool, as her Sister had done.

In Consequence of this, he took Occasion to tell her, one Evening after Supper, that what he had spoken in a Way of Jest to her, at such a Time, was really no Jest in his own Thoughts; that he had been spoken to by a certain Gentleman, a considerable Merchant in the City, whose eldest Son had an Inclination to pay his Respects to her; and I assure you, my Dear, says the Father, he has the Character of a very sober, religious Gentleman; and I am sure his Father and Mother are very good People: Indeed, the whole Family are noted for a religious Family, and I know no Family in the whole City that have a better Character.

She made him no Answer at all, till he began with her again, Why are you so silent, Child? said her Father: Have you nothing to say? Methinks, when I look back upon the Disorder, which the Obstinacy of your Sister has put us all in, I would be glad to have every Dissiculty removed before-hand with you, and therefore I speak early that if you have any Objections, I may hear them, and not be driven afterwards to ask People Pardon, for ill Usage which I have had no Hand in; and I would have you use your Freedom now, that I may take nothing ill from you afterwards: And thus he press'd her to speak.

Daughter. I am in no Haste, Sir, to marry; the Times terrify me; the Education, the Manner, the Conduct of Gentlemen is now so universally loose, that I think for a young Woman to marry, is like a Horse rushing into the Battle; I have not Courage so much as to think of it.

Father. But there are a great many fober, civiliz'd young Gentleman in the World; 'tis hard to reproach them all, because many of them are wicked.

Da. Sir, it is those civiliz'd People which I speak of; for even those, who now pass for sober, are not like what

h

tl

as

fy

of

Si

YO

m

it was formerly; when you look narrowly among thems as they are, in the gross, ten Rakes to one sober Man, so among the sober Men that are call'd civiliz'd Men, and whose Morals will bear any Character, there are ten Atheists to one religious Man; and, which is worse than all the rest, if a Woman finds a religious Man, it is three to one again, whether he agrees with her in Principles; and so she is in Danger of being undone, even in the best.

Fa. I never heard the like! Why, what are my Daughters made of? What, is nothing good enough in the World for you! If you all go upon such Niceties, I must

hever think any more of marrying any of you.

Da. You had rather, Sir, not think of it, I dare fay, than think of seeing us miserable.

Fa. Why there is not a Man on Earth can please you,

as you have stated it.

Da. Providence will either settle me as I would be settled, Sir, or will, I hope, dispose you to be as well satisfy'd with my present Condition, as I am.

Ka. Why, it feems, you are gone mad farther than your

distracted Sister.

18

12

d

11

ill

۲,

es

of

he

2'd

ch

of;

hat

Da. I hope, Sir, I am in my Senses, and shall be kept fo.

Fa. Why, it feems, a religious Husband won't please you: What is it you would have?

Da. I desire, Sir, to live as I am, at least till something

offers, which is fit for me to accept.

Fa. What do you call fit, Child? What can be fit, in

your Way of talking.

Da. When my Judgment and Conscience are satisfied, Sir, I believe my Fancy will not be very troublesome to you: If I must marry, Sir, I would have it be so, as I may expect God's Blessing, and my Father's.

Fa. I tell you nothing in the Nation will fatisfy your Judgment and Conscience, as you call it, if the Notion you

have of Things be true.

Da. Then I am very well fatisfy'd to remain as I am. Fa. That's ugrateful to your Father's Care for you.

dutiful to you; but I know not what you would have me do:

Fa. I would have you fee this Gentleman that I have

proposed to you.

Da. I shall submit to any thing you command me, Sir, that is not a Breach of my Duty to God; I hope you will defire nothing of me, that I cannot do with a quiet Mind.

Fa: Well, you may see him; I hope that can be no Harm.

Da. If you will please to let me know, then, how far you allow me to be in my own Disposal, and how far not; and whether I have the Liberty to resuse him, if I do not like him.

Fa. Yes, if you will refolve to use your Judgment, and not refuse him before you see him, but give good Reasons

for what you do.

Da, I think, Sir, I ought to have a negative Voice, without being obliged to dispute my Reasons with my Father, for that's just bringing me into the same Condition with my Sister; her Reasons are good to her, but not to you, Sir; and so you take her Conscience of Duty to God to be a Contempt of her Duty to you: I would not be run into the same Snare.

Fa You are mighty politive in your demanding a Ne-

cl

fu

fo

M

to

gative Voice against your Father.

Da. But I had better know my Case before-hand, that I may not insist upon more than is my Right, and offend you Sir, in seeming to encroach upon your Government.

Fa. Let me know, then, what your Demand is.

Da. Sir, I think, when you propose marrying to me, the Discourse of Portion and Settlement is in your Province, and I have nothing to do with it: But I think I ought to be at Liberty to like or dislike, receive or resuse the Person, and that absolutely.

Fa. What, without shewing any Reason?

Da. No; I ought, without Doubt, to tell my Father my Objections, and to give a due Force to all the Arguments

ments my Father may use to satisfy my Doubts, but I ought not to be forced to like, even tho' I could not maintain my Reasons.

Fa. And you capitulate with me for this Liberty, before

you see this Gentleman, do you?

e

n.

ir

ot;

ns

e,

2-

OIL

to

od

un

tI

DO

ne,

ro-

ght

the

her

gu-

Da. No, Sir, I do not capitulate with you, but I hope you will, on your own Accord, grant me the Liberty which the Nature of the Thing calls for; that if I must fee the Gentleman, I may have the Freedom to take or refuse; if not, there is no Need to fee him; I may be given by Contract, and married by Proxy, as the great People (Fools; I should say) do, as well as by Treaty.

Fa. Well, well, I an't a going to give you, nor to fell

you; if you wont have him, you may let him alone.

Da. That's all I desire, Sir; with this Addition only; viz. that my Father will not be displeased or disobliged; whether I take or leave.

Fa. I can't promise you that, indeed, Daughter.

Da. I hen I beg of you, Sir, I may never see him at all.

Fa. Very well; then it shall be so; you shall never see him at all: I find you are all alike; you may look out for yourselves, if you will: * But, it may be I may'nt like your chusing any more than you like mine. [Her Father returns.

Fa. I wonder what it is you would all have me do in fuch a Case as this: Here is a Match propos'd to your Sister; how she has treated me, you know: Now I have a Proposal to you, where the grand Objection is removed:

What can you defire of a Father?

Da. Sir, I desire only, that if you think fit to discourse such Things as these with us, we might be able to speak for ourselves without discomposing you; we have not a Mother to stand between, and make our Objections, and to hear our Reasons.

Fa. Well that's true; f it is my Loss as well as yours

† She weeps, and that moves him, especially speaking of her Mos

Come.

^{*} He rifes up in a Passion, and goes away, but comes in again

Come, let me hear, however, if you have any Objection against the Person I propose now, tell it me? I'll endea-

your not to be warm.

Da. I can have no Objection to a Man I never saw, or heard of; but I think we should have a Liberty to refuse, Sir, when we come to discourse of such a Thing with the Person; and that is all I ask, and that we may not disoblige you, if we use that Liberty; and without that Liberty, I desire you will be pleased never to make any Proposal at all to me, and if ever I make one myself, I will be content to be denied.

Fa. You are very positive.

Da. It feems to be so reasonable, Sir, that I cannot think any Children can ask less, or any Father think it is too hard; it is the Children that are to feel the Conse-

quences of the Mistake, if there be any.

Fa Well that's true; come then, if you will talk with this Gentleman, you shall have your Liberty to take him or to leave him; Have you any Objection to make beforehand? If you have, let me know it; that will prevent all Occasions of Disgust.

Da. Will you please to hear me with Patience, Sir?

Fa. Yes, I will, if I can.

Da. You have heard so much said by me, Sir, in my Sister's Behalf, that you must necessarily believe I am of the same Opinion; that is to say, That I would not marty a Man that made no Profession of Religion, upon any Account whatsoever, were his Estate, his Person, his Sobriety, his Qualifications ever so inviting. I need not give Reasons for this, Sir; what I have said, what my Sister and my Aunts have said on that Account is enough; but it is my Missortune, Sir, to have another Scruple beyond all this, and which the Case of my Sister gave no Occasion to mention.

Fa. Very Well; then you intend to be more trouble-

some than your Sister, I find.

Da. I hope not, Sir, because I give my Scruples in before-hand; and if any Thing offers to you abroad, that

will shock the Foundation I lay down, I hope you'll not hearken to it on my Account, and then you will have no Occasion to say I am troublesome.

Fa. Well, let's hear it, however.

Da. Why, Sir, as I will never marry any Man, who does not make some Profession of Religion however rich and agreeable, handsome or sober he is; so, however serious or religious he is, I will never marry any Man, whose Principles, Opinion, and Way of Worship shall not agree with my own.

Fa. And is that your Resolution?

Da. I hope it is well grounded, Sir, and that you will not disapprove my Reasons for in, when you please to hear them calmly, and to bear with my mean Way of ar-

guing them.

is

h

m

e-

all

ny

of

IT-

ny

0-

ive

ter

but

ond

ion

ole-

be-

hat

Fa. I think I was much in the right to say you would be more troublesome than your Sister; however, you do your Sister some Kindness in it, for this extravagant Humour makes her's look a thousand times more reasonable than it did before.

Da. That's what I foresaw, Sir; viz. that I shall remove your Displeasure from my Sister, and bring it down

upon myself; but I cannot help it.

'Fa, Well, I shall relieve myself against all your Humours; I'll talk no more of settling any of you till your

Choiofity is abated.

Tho' her Father seemed to give it over thus in Discourse with his Daughter, yet he had gone farther with the Gentleman that made the Proposal, than he had told her! and had invited the Father and Mother to Dinner the next Day, with an Intent that they should see and be acquainted with his Daughters; supposing, at the same Time, that they would bring the young Gentleman with them.

They came to Dinner accordingly; but, as the Father knew well enough, that the Education of their Son was in a different Way from that of his Daughter, and that the had declared herself so positively in that Part, he had desired

defired them privately not to bring their Son to Dinner: When they were come, and before his Daughter was called in, the Father told them how the Case stood between him and his eldest Daughter, and that he saw no Remedy but this; that, as he had not told her any thing of the Design of this Invitation, or that they were the Family he had defign'd her a Husband out of; fo, if they thought fit to turn their Eyes to his fecond Daughter, he was in Hopes she would have more Wit that to run into the ridiculous Scruples of the eldest: They presently agreed, that it was not at all reasonable to force the Inclination of the young Lady; that they faw no Room to bring the Opinions in Religion together, in their Children, their Opinions at that Time differing extremely, and their Son being as politive, they believed, as his Daughter: fo they faid, With all their Hearts; if their Son could fancy the fecond Daughter as well, it should be the same Thing to them: However, the Mother of the young Gentleman ask'd him, If he would give her Leave to enter into Discourse with his Daughter upon the Subject of her Scruples? He told her, With all his Heart, for he would be glad to have her change her Mind; because, as, on the one Hand, he should be very well fatisfied to bring them together, so he really thought her Notions were empty and simple, and should be glad she was made wifer; But then, Madam, fays he, you must not discover the real Defign, for if you do, the will be backward, to fpeak freely. She agreed to that, and fo this private Discourse ended; and his Daughters being introduced, and the usual Ceremonies pass'd, they went to Dinner, the young Ladies knowing nothing of the Defign of their being invited.

The Father and Mother were charm'd at the Conduct of the young Woman; her Person and Manner, the Modesty of her Behaviour, and, above all, the Politeness and Pertinence of her Discourse; and, something happening to be said about Marrying, the Father salls to rallying his Daughters upon their Nicety in that Point, that nothing would serve them but religious Men; There's my Daughter----, says he, (pointing to his youngest) I

think nothing will do for her but a Parson: she refused a Gentleman of 2000 a Year t'other Day, because he was not religious enough for her.

No, Madam, fays his Daughter, my Father means, because he had no Religion at all; hardly so much as a Coach-horse; for a Coach-horse often knows the Way

to the Church-door.

That alters the Case quite, said Madam: Why, Sir, says she, you would not have married your Daughter to a Brute! A Man without Religion is a worse Brute than a Horse! For the Horse obeys the Dictates of Nature, but an Atheist acts against Reason, Nature, and common Sense. I would not marry a Child of mine to a Man of no Religion, if he had ten thousand Pounds a Year.

Well, says he, there's my Daughter------, (pointing to his eldest) she goes farther; she is not satisfied with a religious Husband, but she must have one of her own O-pinion in Religion, that goes to Church where she goes to Church, and worships just as she worships: I don't

think she will ever be pleased while she lives.

Madam, fays the eldest, I expected my Father would be upon my Bones next: My Father talks of my Opinion, as if I was something that nobody else is; as if I was one of the new Prophets, or of some strange singular Opinion, something monstrous in Religion; all I say is, that, as I profess nothing but what I think is right, and what Thousands agree with me in, if ever I do marty, as I suppose I never shall, Why should I not chuse to have my Husband and I of the same Opinion, that we may serve God together?

Madam, says the old Lady, your Father does but jest with you; he can never oppose so reasonable a Thing as that; I must confess, I think it is much to be desired; I will not say but there is a Possibility of doing well without it; it may not be a Sin; but I own, it is better, if it

can be fo.

I am fure 'twould be a Sin in me, fays the Daughter, because it would be against my Conscience.

Nay, Madam, fays the other, that's true; and you are

very much in the right to infift upon it, if it be fo; and no Doubt, your Father will be far from offering any Thing, that may feem to be a Violence upon your Conscience.

I offer Violence, Madam! fays the Father, nay, they are above that; they take upon them to fay, I will, and I won't to their Father; I affure you they are past my offering Violence to them.

In nothing, Madam, but this erabbed Business of marrying, says the Daughter, and there indeed we do take

fome Liberty with my Father.

Well, Sir, jays the old Lady, you must allow Liberty there; Marriage is a Case for Life, and must be well confider'd; and the young Ladies are to bear it, fall it-how it will, you know, for better or worse; they had need be allow'd some Liberty there.

Besides, Madam, fays the youngest, all the Liberty we take is in Negatives only; we don't offer to take any Body that my Father don't like, only we don't care to take such

as we don't like ourselves.

The old Gentleman then put in: Upon my Word, Sir, fays he, I think your Daughters are in the right; for certainly, tho' we may refuse to let them marry where they may choose, yet I can't think we should deny them the Liberty to resuse what we may offer; or else we may as well give them in Marriage, as was done in old Days, and never let them see one another.

The eldeft Sifter turn'd her Head towards her Father

at this, but faid another.

I understand you, Betty, fays her Father: But she said nothing still; and the old Lady, finding the Discourse pinch'd a little hard, begun some other Talk, and soon after, the Men withdrawing, left the Ladies together.

When the Men were gone; Hark ye, says the old Gentlewoman, I was willing to break off the Discourse just now, because I was afraid it was offensive to your Father; but pray let us talk a little more to you, Madam; I fully approve the Resolution of your youngest Sister, but

but methinks yours is a little uncharitable, speaking to the Eldest.

Eld. Sist. I was very much obliged to you, Madam, for breaking off the Discourse; for my Father is passionate, and is sometimes so out of Temper with us upon these Points, that we are greatly griev'd at it, and particularly that he will not give us Leave to speak.

To Sift. I am fure it has almost broke my Heart.

Old. Lady. I am very forry for it; for indeed I think yours is nothing but what every Woman that is a Chriftian ought to think herself oblig'd to : What dreadful Doings must there be, when a religious Woman marries a Wretch that is a Despiser of God! A Christian to be link'd to an Infidel! One that ferves God to be join'd to one of God's Enemies! And then to love such a Man too: The very Thought is enough to fill one with Confusion! Take it which Way you will, it is equally dismal. First, to be married to him, and not love him, that's a Hell upon Earth! And to love him! One that we must reslect on as a Limb of the Devil! a Son of Perdition! To embrace one that God abhors! To have the Affections bound to one that God hates! What Contradictions are thefe! What Horror must fill the Soul while they live! and what dreadful Thoughts must croud into one's Mind, if such a Man should come to die before us! Dear young Lady, Jays she, you are happy that you could defend yourfelf against such a Proposal.

Eld. Sift. But, Madam, your Charge upon me is a little hard; I think the Arguments are as strong almost on my Part as my Sister's, tho' they are of another Nature.

Old La. No, I can't say so, Madam; it is true, there is something to be said in your Case, but nothing so essential as in the other; and, I said, methinks it looks as if you wanted Charity: I hope, Child, you do not think all Opinions but your own are satal to be profess'd.

Eld. Sift. No, Madam, not at all: I hope there are good People of all Perfuaions; but if I did not think my own best, how could I answer the cleaving to it myself?

H 3 Old

Old La. So far are you right.

Eld. Sist. Then, Madam, though in Charity I ought to allow others to be good Christians, and that I should, and do keep up a friendly Correspondence with many who dissent from my Judgment in religious Matters, yet there is a great deal of Difference between Charity to them, and Union with them.

Old La. You have studied the Point thoroughly, I per-

ceive; I understand you perfectly; pray go on-

Ela. Sist. Madam, in Discourse with my Father, I could never use any Freedom, or obtain Leave to propose my Scruples, with the Reasons of them: But I hope you will allow me Liberty.

Old La. With all my Heart, Madam, for I am glad to

enter into fo curious a Debate with you.

Eld. Sist. Religion, Madam, without-doors is one Thing, Religion within-doors is another: In the Town among my Acquaintance, and in the Neighbourhood, a due Charity to every one is what I think the Christian Principle calls for, and I converse freely with good People of every Opinion, extending Charity to all in Lowlines of Mind, esteeming every one better than myself: But within-doors the Case alters; Family-Religion is a sociable Thing, and God should be worshipped there with one Heart, and with one Voice: There can be no Separation there, without a dreadful Breach both of Charity and Duty.

Old La. You flart a new Thing to me, indeed, and it

is somewhat surprising.

Eld. Sift. It may be true, Madam, that there may be divers Opinions in a Nation, without Breach of Charity; but I believe it is impossible it should be so in a Family, without Breach of Affection: What Union, what Oneness of Desires, what perfect Agreement (without which a Man and Wife can never be said to discharge the Duty of their Relation) can there be where there is a Diversity of Worship, a Clashing of Opinions, and an Opposition of Principles?

Old La, But, Child, you carry it too high; if they dif-

fer in Principles, indeed, there is fomething to be faid; but we are talking of a Difference in Opinion only, where

the Fundamentals may be the fame.

Eld. Sift. Madam, I recal the Word Principles then, and join with you to confine it to Opinion only; but 'tis the same Thing in its Proportion; the Union can never be perfect, while the differing Sentiments of Things leave Room for Disputes between them: For Example, Madam; the differing Forms of Worship; one will pray by a Book only, the other without a Book wholly; this is as light a Difference as can be spoken of; But how shall God be worshipp'd with the united Voice and Affections of the whole Family even in this Case? What Helps will two such Relations be to one another, in praying to God either by themselves, or with their Families?

Old La. Upon my Word, you fenfibly affect me now

with it.

fincerely religious apart, shall worship God in their own separate Way, tho' better so than not at all; but the Zeal, the Affection, the uniting their Hearts in their Worship, their praying with and for one another; this alas! is all lost. Then say, it be in the publick Worship, there they may make a wosh! Separation; God, that has made them one, is serv'd by them as two; God has joined them together; and they part asunder in their serving him; God has made them one, and yet they cannot worship him as one: How does this consist, Madam?

Old La. I fee you are full of it.

ther one Heart or one Voice goes with their Worship; Tho' they communicate in the same Ordinance, they fet up two Altars; one worships here, and one there: And tho' their Faces are both set Heavenwards, perhaps they turn Back to Back as soon as they go out of their Doors to the publick Worship of God.

Old La. You are very clear in it, indeed, Madam. Eld. Sift. This is not all, Madam; there are several

H 4

Family

Family-Circumstances besides these, which make an Union of Opinion absolutely necessary: As first, Family-Worship is a Thing, without which Families, however privately and separately devout, are coupled with Heathens, Jer. x. 25. Pour out thy Wrath upon the Heathen, and upon the Families which call not upon thy Name: Whatever there may in publick Worship, there should always be an exact Harmony in private; and how can this be, where either of them diffents from the Manner? If there is a Discord in the Manner, there can be no Concord in the Performance, no Union in the Affections; in a Word, their Prayers will be hindred, and who would be thus unequally yok'd?

Old La. I expected you would name that Scripture, tho' it is certain that was spoken principally to those who married with Unbelievers, which is a different Case.

Eld. Sift. Well, Madam, but to come to another Case: Suppose the Husband and Wife we are speaking of have Children, what Foundation of Eternal Schifm is there in the Family! Some of the Children adhere to the Father, some to the Mother; some worship in this Mount, and fome no where but at Jerusalem; some go with the Father, some with the Mother; some kneel down with the Father, some with the Mother; 'till as they grow up, they really learn not to kneel down at all: Family-Education, united Instruction, Caution, Example, they are all dreadfully mangled and divided, 'till in the End they come to nothing; and the Children grow out of Government, past Instruction, and are all lost. These, Madam, are tome of the Reasons I would have given my Father (if he would have had Patience with me) why in his late Propofal he had to make, I defired that I might be at Liberty to choose by my own Principles, and not at Random, as too many do.

Old: La. But, Madam, do you not allow, that if both Parties are fincerely pious and religious, they may make Allowances to one another, and make Conscience of hindering and pulling back one another in the Duties of Re-

ligion?

Eld.

th

ef

in

ha

ne

u

CO

W

So

ea

an

he

La

you

a cl

my

hav the to my View, for I have often considered them both: First, the more sincere in Religion either of them are, the more fix'd in Principle and Opinion, it is likely they will be, and the farther from making Abatements to one another: And especially, Secondly, In the great Article of educating and instructing their Children; for what tender Mother, that having fix'd her Opinion, as she thinks, in the best Manner and Way, could bear not to have her Children brought up in the same Sentiments of Religion, which she thinks most agreeable to the reveal'd Will of God? And the more conscientious and religious she was, the more steadily she would cleave to it as her Duty; and the like of the Man; So that here would be a constant Heart-burning and Uneasiness.

Old. La. Truly, Madam, I think your Reasons good, and you guard them so well with such self-evident Conclusions, that I cannot think your Father can desire you to break through them: If you think it will be for your Service, I'll mention it again to him.

Eld. Sift. If you do, Madam, I desire to be absent; for

he will not bear it from me.

Old. La. Let me alone for that.

When the old Lady had done this Conversation, she began to call for her Husband and the Father; so the young Ladies withdrew: When she was come to them, she apply'd herself to the Father and her Husband in a few Words.

Wife. Upon my Word, Says she to her Husband, the young Lady has more Religion in her than all of us, and a clearer hight into the particular Parts of a religious Life, than any that ever I met with before.

Fa. Why, fays the Father, have you had a Battle with

my Betty?

Wife. No, upon my Word, we have had no Battles; I have not been able to open my Mouth against one Word the says; she is able to run down a whole Society of Doc-

ter

had

wh

ftil

lon

inde

nob

of t

Chi

ly,

Hea

ter a

he h

Wife

gion

fection

of A

knov

him)

and]

canno

he is

he ha

Fa.

Wit

he Pe

* Sh

Affect

n

Z

tors in these Points; I am a perfect Convert to all she says, and the I wish from my Soul my Son had such a Wise, yet I would not for the World they should come together at the Price of putting the least Violence upon such noble Principles, so solidly established, and so sirmly adhered to; and I defy all Mankind to consute her.

Huf. You prompt my Curiofity; I wish you could

tell us a little of the Story.

Wife. A little! I can easily repeat it to you; 'tis impossible I should forget it: But it may be, you, Sir, turning to the Father, may not care to hear it.

Fa. Yes, yes; I would very willingly hear it, tho' I

did not care to hear it from her.

Wife. Well then----*

Hus. I never heard any Thing more solid, and intimating a thorough Sense of Religion in my Life; I wish my Son and she were both of the same Opinion then; for a Woman of such Principles can never be fatally mistaken in Opinion.

Fa. I confess I would never give her an Opportunity to explain herself thus with me; but I affure you I am so mov'd with it, that I will never offer to impose upon her

again.

Wife. Then you see, Sir, it was an Error to be so angry with your Child, as not to hear her; I fear you

have done so with both of them-

Fa. Truly I have; but I say now I have been wrong to them both; and indeed more to my youngest Daughter than to my eldest; For she resused the Gentleman because he really had no Religion at all, and yet I was in a violent Passion with her.

Wife. Nay, that was hard indeed; for if there be all this to be faid, why a Woman should not marry a Man of a different Opinion in Religion; there must be much more to be said why she should not marry one that despites Religion: And this indeed I said to your youngest Daugh.

^{*} Here she gives them a full Account of all the Discourse above.

ter, applauding her Conduct, tho' I did not know that yo

had used her hardly on that Account,

Fa. I would be obliged to you, Madam, to let me know what Discourse you had with her too, for that Affair is still depending.

Wife. With all my Heart; my Discourse was not

ong-----*

I

a-

2

en

ty

fo

er

fo

cu

ng

gh-

be-

na

all

of

ore Re-

gh.

ove.

Fa. Indeed, Madam, you are right; the Thing is so indeed; but he was a pretty Gentleman, and had a very noble Estate, and I was mightily pleas'd with the Thoughts of the Match, and that made me more passionate with the Child than I should otherwise have been.

Wife. But how came she to know he was such a one? Fa. Truly, his own Folly too; he told her so directly, in so many Words; own'd he had not troubled his. Head about Religion, and did not intend it; made a Banter and Jest of Religion in general; told her, it was a Road he had never travell'd, and that he intended to choose a Wife sirst, and then, perhaps, he might choose his Religion.

Wife. Nay then, either he had no Conduct or no Af-

fection for her.

Fa. As to the last; he not only profess'd a great deal of Affection, but chose her out from the rest; and you know she is the youngest, (for I design'd my eldest for him) and made her the particular Mistress of his Choice; and I verily believe lov'd her very well; nay, the Girl cannot deny but she had a Kindness for him; and indeed he is a most lovely Gentleman.

Wife. She has acted a noble Part indeed; and the more Affection she really had for him, the more of a Christian

he has shewn in her Conduct.

Fa. So you would fay indeed, if you knew all her Conduct, and knew the Person too.

Wife. If it be not improper, I should be glad to know the Person.

she re eats what she had said to the youngest Daughter.

Fa. Madam, I should be loth to name him to his Prejudice; and if you think it will be so, I hope you will let it go no further.

Wife. I promise it shall never go out of my Mouth with-

ho

Vi

and

Wit

pre

ner

mif

and

the

plea

to p

rup

ther

to c

who

With

dano

Stor

ceffi

End

est !

fays

and '

it th

fpect

ly H

to it

whic

fuch

great

Hust

ly re

That

out your Leave.

Fa. Why, it is young Mr.----, a Gentleman, I be-

lieve you have heard of.

Wife. Heard of him! we know him intimately well: But I am furpriz'd at it, upon an Account that I believe will furprize you too.

Fa. What can that be?

Wife. Why it is true, that Gentleman had no Religion; Poor Gentleman! he came of a most unhappy Stock; there never was any Religion in the Family; but yet this may be said of him, he was a modest, sober, well-behav'd Gentleman; you never heard an ill Word come out of his Mouth, nor found any indecent Action in his Behaviour.

Fa. That's true; and I thought that a great Matter,

as the Youth go now.

Wife. But I can tell you more News than that of him, he is become the most pious, serious, religious Gentleman in all the Country.

Fa. You furprize me indeed, now.

Wife. I assure you, 'tis no Copy of his Countenance; 'tis known, and he is valued and honoured for it by all the Gentlemen round him, and he behaves himself with so much Humility, so much serious Gravity, that, in short, 'tis the Wonder and Surprize of all that know him.

Fa. Pray, how long has this Alteration appeared in

him?

Wife. About three Months, I believe.

Fa. I wish you had told my Daughter this.

Wife. It was impossible I should have brought such a Thing in, that knew nothing of the Circumstance.

Fa. Nay if you had, she would not have believed a Word of it; on the contrary, she would have taken it all for a Trick of mine, and that I had invited you hither on purpose to bring in such a Story.

Wife.

wife. Let me alone for that again another Time; I hope you will give the young Ladies leave to return this

Visit; I design to invite them to come and see me.

e-

1

ve

n;

re

ay

n-

his

ur.

er,

im,

nan

ce;

all

vith

ort,

l in

ch a

ed a

it all

er on

Upon this Foot the Discourse ended for that Time, and all Thoughts of the Match for the eldest Daughter with the Son of that Gentlewoman being laid aside for the present, the old Lady, at parting, in a very friendly Manner, invited the young Ladies to her House, and they promised to come, and the Father said aloud he would come and bring them.

It was not long before the young Ladies put their Father in mind of his Appointment; for being mightily pleased with the old Gentlewoman, they had a great Mind to pay the Visit, that the Acquaintance might be settled. Their Father appointed the next Day, but being interrupted just at the Time he intended to go, he caused them to go without him, and send the Coach back for him

to come after them when his Bufiness was done.

While they were here, the good old Gentlewoman, who entertained them with great Civility, diverted them with every Thing she could think of; and after abundance of other useful Chat, they fell to talking the old Stories over again, about religious Husbands, and the Neceffity there was to have both Husband and Wife join their Endeavours for propagating Family Religion: The youngest Daughter repeated her Mother's Maxim; Madam, fays she, it was a Rule my Mother gave us at her Death, and which I see so much Weight in, that I defire to make it the Foundation, upon which I would build all my Prospects of Happiness, viz. That a religious Life is the only Heaven upon Earth. I have added some other Things to it fince, which my own Observation directs me to, but which I believe you will allow to be in their Degree just such as these, viz. That a religious Family is one of the greatest Comforts of a religious Life: That where both Husband and Wife are not mutually, at least, if not equally religious, there can never be truly a religious Family: That therefore for a religiously inclined Woman to marry

CO

fu

G

hi

Fa

he

ha

he

ing

to

a I

the

mo Fri

the

don

and

dej

rid Vif

his

and Ni

Was

Wit

Da

feni

poo

the

alw

a Si

Mai

Dan

and,

an irreligious Husband, is to entail Persecution upon herfelf as long as the lives. The old Lady replied, I find. Madam, as young as you are, you have studied this Point very well. Indeed, Madam, faid the eldest Sister, my Sifter has had Occasion for it; for the has been hard put to it, what with the Offers of an extraordinary Match. my Father's violent Passion, and (among our setves, Madam) not a little the Importunity of her own Affections, that for my Part, I must confess, I wonder she has been able to fland her Ground. They are three powerful Arguments, I acknowledge, faid the old Lady: Pray, Madam, as far as it may be proper, let me know fomething of the Manner; you need not mention Persons, I am not inquisitive on that Score, I affure you. If my Sister give me Leave, Madam, fays the eldest; the youngest said, she left her at Liberty. Why then, Madam, Jays Be, my Father *.

Well, Madam, fays fbe, I will not fay all my Thoughts on this furnishing Story, because your Sister is here; for tis a Rule with me, never to praise any one to their Face, or reproach any behind their Backs; but it is an extraordinary Story indeed; and turning to the youngest Sifter, the faid to her very seriously, I pray God fortify you, Child, in such Resolutions, and grant that you may have the true End of them fully answered; that, if ever you do marry, it may be to a Man as uncommonly ferious, pious, and fincere, as you have been inimitably resolute in resusing fuch great Offers, for the Want of it. Then, turning to her eldest Sister, fays she, this surprising Story puts me in mind of another Story, which a very good Man, an old Acquaintance of ours, told me the other Day, and which, they fay, has just now happened to a young Gentleman that he knows in the Country; it is a pretty Way off too, but he told us his Name; I believe my Husband knows the Name, and I tell you the Story for your Sister's En-

couragement

^{*} Here she gives her an Abridgment of the whole Story, but without the most extravagant Part of her Father's Passion, that it might not resect upon him.

couragement: Who knows, but she may be a Means, by such unexampled Conduct, as this of her's is, to bring the Gentleman she has had upon her Hands to some Sense of his Condition.

There is a Gentleman in that Country, of a very good Family, and of a very great Estate, but young, and, I think he said, a Batchelor; he is not above six and twenty, and has between two and three Thousand a Year; it seems, he is a most accomplished well-bred Man, a handsome charming Person; and every thing, that could be said of a-Man, to set him out, he said of him: He had, indeed, been of a Family, be said, that had been eminently wicked, so that the very Name of Religion had scarce been heard of among them for some Ages; and young Master, said my Friend, could not be said well to be worse than his Fa-

ther and Grandfather who went before him.

nt

ly

ut.

h,

1).

or

to

ts,

ar

ma

ve

ve,

at

*

hts

for

ice,

ras

Sif-

you,

ave

e do

ous,

fing

g to

e in

old

ich,

man too,

TOWS

Ena

, but

hat it

However, it happened, it feems that he went to London, I think, fays the, my friend faid 'twas last Winter, and when he came back, he was strangely melancholy and dejected, and quite altered in his Convertation; instead of riding Abroad and visiting the Gentlemen, and receiving Visits, from them, he shun'd all Company, walk'd about his Gardens and Woods all alone till very late in the Night, and all his Servants wondered what ail'd him; that one Night they were in a great Fright for him, knowing he was out on Foot, and alone; when, about ten o'Clock at Night, he came in with a poor honest Country Fellow with him, that lived almost three Miles off; that the next Day he took that poor Man Home to his House, and fent for his Wife and Children, who all lived before in a poor Cottage on the Waste, and provided for them; gave the poor Man a Farm Rent-free for twelve Years, which always went for 22% a Year, with a good House; lent him a Stock for manuring it too, and made him a Bailiff of the Manor, and, in short, made a Man of him: Whereupon, every Body said, that the Esquire had been in some great Danger or other, and the poor Man had faved his Life; and, when somebody happened to say as much to him one Day.

Day, he answered, Yes, that poor Man had done more than faved his Life, for he had faved his Soul.

It feems, this poor labouring Wretch, tho' miferable to the last Degree, as to this World, was yet known to be a most religious, serious Christian, and a very modest, humble, but knowing and fensible Man, and he had been difcoursing good Things with him, and from that Time forward the poor Man was scarce ever from him; that it was observed by some of the Servants, that the next Morning after the poor Man came Home with him, he came again, and brought a Bible with him, which was left in the young Gentleman's Chamber, and that this poor Man and he were often locked up an Hour or two together, almost every Day; that next Market-day the poor Man went to the next Market-town, upon some Business for the Gentleman, and brought Home a new Bible, and feveral other religious Books, and that his Master was continually reading them: In short, our Friend tells us, faid she, that he is become the most sober, religious Christian that, for a Man of his Fortune and Quality, has ever been heard of, and that he is admired by all the Country for it.

I tell you this Story, Madam, turning to the youngest Sister, to confirm you in your Resolution, and to let you see, that there are some religious Gentlemen in the World still, and that the Gentlemen may be ashamed, when they pretend to say Religion is below their Quality; for my Friend says, that this Gentleman is, with his Religion, also the humblest, sweetest tempered Creature in the World, ready to do good Offices to the poorest of the Country, and yet mannerly and agreeably pleasant with the Greatest; and his Family is a little Pattern of Virtue to all round them.

Ay, Madam, fays the Eldest, 'tis such a Gentleman my Sister would have: But, fays her Sister, Where are they to be found? I never expect it. Pray Madam, says the eldest Sister, in what Part, of the World does this black Swan, this unheard-of, non-such Thing of a Gentleman live? I really forget the Place, Madam, says the old Lady, but it is some where in Hampsbire.

She

i

She perceived, at that Word, both the young Ladies changed a little, and looked at one another; so she turned her Discourse off to some other Subject, and lest them in the Dark, as to the Name of the Gentleman; for the pre-

ceived they both gueffed at it, or suspected it.

15

1,

n,

er

1-

19

in

nd

est

ou

11,

re-

nd

he

dy

yet

nd

n.

my

ney

the

ack

nan

dy,

When they had taken their Leave, and the two Sisters were in the Coach coming Home, fays the eldest Sister to the other, did you observe Mrs-----'s Story of the Gentleman in Hampshire? Yes, said the other, I did; and I believe you fancy 'tis the same Person we know of. It is very true, says the Eldest, I did think so, all the while she was telling the Story; and I expected she would name him, but I was loth to ask her his Name. I am glad you did not, says the other, for I know no Good it can be to me to hear it, one Way or other, now he is gone Why, would not you be glad to know, that he was really such a one as she has described? says the Eldest. Yes, truly, for his own Sake I should, said her Sister; but it is nothing to me now; I had rather never have him mention-

ed at all to me, upon any Occasion whatever.

After they were come Home, their Father, who had been engaged all the while, had fent the Coach back for them, with an Excuse for his not coming; was very inquilitive to know of them, what Discourse they had had; and, his eldest Daughter telling him one Story and another Story, he would cry, Well, was that all? For he expected the had broke the Thing to them. No, Jays the Eldest, the told us a strange Story in Hampsbire; and with that repeated the Passage Word for Word. Her Father took no Notice of it at that Time, but two or three Days after, as they were at Supper, he fays to his eldest Daughter, Betty, Who do you think the Gentleman in Hampsbire is, that Mrs B----told you the Story of? I cannot tell, fays she; Pray, Who was it? Even as I thought when you told of it, faid her Father, for I had heard fomething of it before; it is nobody else but Mr.----, the same your wife Sifter there thought fit to treat with fo much ill Manners.

Nay,

1

Nay, Sir, fays the Eldest, do not say my Sister treated him with ill Manners; for he owns the contrary to that himself: But, how are you sure of it, Sir, that it is he? Why, I have had the Story, says ber Father, from her Husband, who is greatly affected with it, and he named his Name to me, not knowing in the least that I knew any Thing of him.

Truly, fays the Eldest, I am very glad of it for his Sake, but it does not fignify a Farthing to her now; for, if he was to come to her again To-morrow, with all the Sobriety and Reformation about him, she would have nothing to

fay to him.

Why so. Child, says the Father, Did you not own she loves him? Yes, says the Daughter, before she came to know what a Creature he was. Well, then, says the Father, if that be removed, and he is become another Man, she will love him again; for she had no other Objection against him, had she? No, Sir, says the Daughter, she had no other Objection; but she will never believe him, let his Pretences to Religion be what they will. Why so? Says the Father. Because, Sir, he told her, that if he had known her Mind, he would have pretended to a World of Resonation and Religion, and that he did not doubt but he could be Hypocrite enough to cheat her.

Nay, if he has been so soolish, I know not what to say to it, says the Father; let it rest as it is: If she will not have him, whether he be religious or not religious, then the Objection of his being not religious was a Sham and a Cloak, and she stands out in mere Obstinacy against her own Interest, purely to affront her Father; let her go on, till she comes to be convinced by her own Missortune, I'll

meddle no more about it.

The eldest Sister failed not to relate this Story very particularly to her Sister, who, very gravely musing on the Particulars, answered her Sister thus, after several other sober and religious Expressions:

Dear Sister, says she, this Thing has been Affliction enough to me; but my Father's Conduct has always made Why, that's true, Jays the eldeft Sifter ; but, What must

be done then?

Done! fays she, let it alone; let it rest, till we hear something or other of it in the ordinary Way of such Things.

But what must we do with my Father ? fags the Eldest,

for he is always talking to me about it.

Do! fays the other, Give the same Answer to him from

me, as I do to you.

Then fays the Eldest, I am sure he will never rest, till he brings it about again; for he is strangely intent upon it.

Let that be as pleases God, I will be wholly neuter,

says the youngest Sister.

r

11

e

15

.

Some Time after this Discourse, the Father, having some Occasion, for his Health, went down to the Bath, and taking all his Daughters with him, they continued there some Months; in which Time they contracted an Acquaintance with a Lady and her two Daughters, who came thither from Hampsbire: The old Lady had been a Widow of a Gentleman of Quality, by whom she had had two Daughters, but was now married to an eminent Clergyman in the Country where she lived; and they were all together

together at the Bath, and lodged in the fame Apartments with these Ladies.

It happened one Day after Dinner, talking freely together about marrying religious Husbands and Wives; the eldest Daughter, as what is always much upon the Mind, will be, in Proportion, much upon the Tongue, insisted in Discourse upon the Misery of unequal Matches, and how unhappy it was, either to Husband or Wise, when a religious, pious, sincere Christian, whether Man or Woman, was married to another, who had no Sense of Religion; and she gives a long Account of a Relation of their Father's, but without naming their Aunt, how good a Husband she had in all other Respects, how comfortably and pleafantly they lived, but only for that one Thing: and then she told them, (still without naming any Body) how many odd Tricks Sir James served his Lady, and the like.

Well, Madam, fays the old Clergyman, I can tell you fuch a Story of a Lady in our County, as I believe you never heard the like; I do not know the Woman, fays the Doctor, but I know the Gentleman intimately well, and have had a great deal of religious Conversation with him,

upon the Occasion I shall tell you of.

He courted a young Lady, fays the Doctor, but, whether she lived in our Country, or City, or where, he is perfectly mute, only that he often tells her Christian Name; and, seeing he seems resolved to conceal her Person, nobody will be so rude to press him on that Head.

The Gentleman, fays the Doctor, is of a very good Family, has a noble Estate, a comely Person, and a compleat courtly Education, and, till this happened, was almost al-

ways at London.

His Mistress must be little less than an Angel in human Shape, by his Description, but that we give no Heed to: for, Madam, says the old Doctor, you know, Men in Love give themselves a Liberty that way: But however, after all Things were agreed, and the Writings drawing, it seems, she threw him off entirely, and refused him merely because the found he was a Man of no Religion.

Says

Says the eldest Sister, How could she know that, Sir? He was not so foolish to tell her so himself, I suppose,

Yes, fays the Doctor, he did; Why then, fays the Sifter, I suppose he was very indifferent whether he had her or no. Indeed, fays the Doctor, one would think so, and I said so to him; but he told me, that it was so far from that, that he had taken up his Resolution never to have any other Woman, if she were the richest, best, and most beautiful Creature alive.

Then, perhaps, the Lady has a superior Fortune to him, besides her other Qualifications, says the Sister. No, just the contrary, says the Doctor. But, Madam, says he, I'll tell you the History of this Gentleman, if it is not too long for you; 'tis a Story cannot be unprofitable to any one to hear, especially to you Ladies, who have taken up such happy Resolutions about marrying none but religious Husbands. The Ladies bow'd, in token they desired him to go on with the Story. So the Doctor went on.

Nothing touch'd this Gentleman so near, says he, after he was gone from his Mistress, as to reslect what kind of a Wretch or Monster he was, that a virtuous young Lady, and one who he had Reason to believe had no Dislike of him, should be afraid to marry him for fear of being ruin'd, and that she should think if she took him, she declared War against Heaven, and renounced all Pretensi-

ons of Duty to her Maker.----*

We must suppose the Sisters to have much less Sense of Religion than they were known to have, and particularly less Sense of the Case itself, in which it was easy to know they were nearly concern'd, if they were not very much moved with the Particulars of this Story; and no sooner had the Doctor sinish'd his Relation, with some very handsome Restaions upon it, but the Sisters long'd to with-

^{*} Here he related the whole Story, his Talk with himself, the Discourse at the Chocolate house, his Retreat into the Country, his happening to hear the poor Countryman at Prayer, his Conversation with him poon the Way, and his Conduct afterwards, all in the Manner as related before.

draw, to compare their own Thoughts together, where

they could do it with Freedom.

But the eldest Daughter went farther; for the perhaps, her Curiosity was not greater than her Sister's, yet as her Courage was greater and her Concern in it less, she was resolv'd to get the Name of this Gentleman, if possible; accordingly, at length, she ask'd the Doctor, if the Name of this Gentleman was a Secret? No, Madam, says the Doctor, the whole Neighbourhood know the Story in general, and it is nothing at all to his Dishonour. No, indeed, Sir, says she, but just the contrary; and if it was otherwise, I would not have ask'd his Name. Indeed, Madam, says the Doctor, his Name is no Secret; it is Mr------the eldest Son of Sir I bomas.---, by whom he enjoys an Estate of 2000l. a Year, and after his Uncle, who is very old, he has near a thousand Pounds a Year more entail'd upon him, -

The two Sisters had heard too much to hold any longer, the youngest especially, who pretending some Indisposition, withdrew, and her Sister soon after: When her Sister came to her, she said, Well, Child, what do you say to this Story? There is no Room to think there can be any Design in this old Gentleman, or any Hypocrity in the

Particulars, if they are true.

Her Sister said never a Word, but she found she had been crying, and that she was still too sull of it to speak; so she let her alone a while, till, after some Time setching a great Sigh, which gave her Passions some Vent, says the youngest, Why, what do you say to it? I say to it! says the eldest Sister, I can say neither less or more to it than what the two Disciples said to one another, going to Emmaus, about our Saviour's Discourse to them, after he was gone. Did not our Hearts burn within us when he talked to us? I am sure mine did, says she; Ay, and mine too, says the youngest: But it is all nothing to me now. Now, says the eldest Sister, if all the Story be true, it may be something to you still; for you see, the Doctor says, he is resolv'd to have no body else. I give no heed to that,

now between us, and he ought to refuse me now, for the very same Reason that I refused bim before; for I have not Religion enough for such a Convert as this, I am sure, any more than a Man without any Notion of a Deity, had Religion enough for me. Well, well, says her Sister, let Providence, which brings all Things to pass its own Way, work as he sees sit; I dare say, as my Aunt said, we shall hear more of it.

They had very little Discourse at that Time but what ended thus: But the eldest Sister had a great Mind her Father should hear the Story too, if possible, before they lest the Place; and she resolved to take an Opportunity to bring it about, if she could; but she was happily prevented by the Forwardness of her Father to complain of his Daughter's Nicety on all Occasions: For in Discourse with the Doctor and his Lady, the young Ladies on both Sides being absent, took a Liberty to exclaim vehemently, how foolish one of his Daughters had been, and how she had obstinately cast off a Gentleman of such and such Qualifications, as before. My Dear, says the Doctor's Lady to him, Pray tell Mr,————the Story you told the young Ladies Yesterday: With all my Heart, said the Doctor; so he repeated the whole Story.

The Father was exceedingly surprized at the Particulars, but more when the Doctor told him the Name of the Gentleman: However, he held his Tongue, asit happen'd, and did not let the Doctor know how near it related to his Family; but in the Evening, taking his Opportunity, he calls his eldest Daughter to him, Hark ye, Betty, says he, Did the Doctor tell you a Story t'other Day of a Gentleman in Hampshire? Yes, Sir, says she. And was your Sister by? says he. Yes, Sir, says she. And do you know that this is the same Mr.——that we know of? says her Father. Yes, Sir, says she, he told us his Name: Well, and what does your sister say to it? says he. She says little, Sir, says his Daughter; but she cannot but be moved with it; for 'tis a surprizing Story, I dire say, says her

Father.

Father, I shall hear of him again; she won't turn him off again, I hope; I am sure she does not deserve him now. She says so herself, says the Daughter, That he ought to resuse her now, for the same Reason that she resused him. Well, says the Father, we shall certainly hear of him again, I am fully persuaded; he will have no Rest till he comes

to fee her again.

A few Weeks after this they returned to London, and the eldest Sister being impatient to see her Aunt, and to give her fome Account of these Things, they went both away to Hampstead: When they came thither, she failed not to give her Aunt a particular Account of all these Paffages, as well that which bad happen'd at their Vifit to the Merchant's Lady in London, as what had happen'd at the Bath; all which, but especially the last, were wonderfully furprizing and agreeable to their Aunt. Well, Niece, fays the Aunt to the youngest Sister, what do you think of these Things? I can fay little to them, Madam, fays she; I am glad, for his Sake, that God has open'd his Eyes. But is it no Satisfaction to you, Child, fays her Aunt, that you have been so far the Instrument of it? Alas! Madam, Says She, I the Instrument! I have been none of the Instrument, not I. Yes, yes, replies her Aunt, you have, and he acknowledges it too: And turning to the eldest Sister, Says She, I think, Child, now you may perform your Promise, and tell your Sister what he said to you when he called here as he went out of Town. Yes, Madam, Says She, so I think too *.

I think you might have told me this before, fays the youngest Sister. Nay, Sister, replied she, Did you not take me short, and sorbid me telling you any Thing, and withdrew out of the Room, and bid me tell it my Aunt? Why that's true, I did so, says she again; and I have been so consus'd, that I know not when I do well, and when I do ill: Indeed, Niece, says her Aunt, I also obliged her

^{*} Here she gives her Sister a full Account of what he had said, as before.

not to tell you; for I concluded, if there was any Thing in it, we should hear of it again; and if we did not, it could do you no Service.

While they were talking thus, a Coach stopt at the Door, and a Servant brought Word their Father, and another

Gentleman with him, was below Stairs.

It will be necessary here to leave this Part a while, and bring forward the Story of the young Gentleman, as far as it is needful to the Coherence of Things; the Story

also will be very short.

The young Gentleman having, as has been said, taken his new Tutor, the poor Countryman, into the House with him, received so much Assistance from his Advice, and had daily such Instruction in religious Things, from the wholesome, plain Counsels of this humble poor Creature, that the Benefit of them soon appear'd in his Conversation, and his Reformation soon became visible in the general Course of his Life; he kept Company with the soberest, gravest, and most religious Persons that he could find; he kept a most sober, regular, reformed Family; and seeming to resolve to reside pretty much there, for the better Government of his Family, he took in a young Minister of an extraordinary good Character to be his Chaplain, and caused every Servant who appeared disorderly or vicious to be put away out of his House.

These, as the natural Consequences of a sincere Work upon his own Mind, were the visible Product of that blessed Change, and indeed an agreeable Evidence of that Sincerity of it; but they were far from being the Sum of Things; for, in a Word, he proved to be a most pious, sincere Christian in all his Ways; and as this was attended with a natural Sweetness in his Disposition, Modesty and Generosity in his Manner, and an excellent Temper, free from all manner of Pride or Hypocristy, it made him perfectly agreeable to all Sorts of People; those who were not like him valued and honoured him, and the sober, religious Part of Men were delighted in him beyond exprese

fing.

He went on thus for near two Years, liv'd generally in the Country; and if he came to London, as Occasion required, yet it appeared that his Choice was rather for the Country: especially, because he could not be long from his faithful Assistant the poor Clergyman, who was upon all Occasions, as we may say, Clerk of the Closet to him, and with whom he kept up a most religious but secret Conversation, and had Retirements with him, which none were acquainted with but themselves.

Z

I

0

di

th

W

ou

he

ga

to

ho

DO

ha

tha

he

ter

Da

Wit

bel

peć

twi

anf

Th

for

his

Th

full

and

the

don

But in all this Enjoyment of himself, and the retir'd Life he had now plac'd his Delight in, he found something still wanting too, as well to complete his Happiness here, as to forward his Progress in Things of an eternal and durable Nature, and he began to say to himself, that he had robb'd himself of much of his Comfort, in neglecting so long to have the Assistance of that blessed Creature, whom God had made the first Instrument to touch

his Mind with a Sense of good Things.

These Thoughts dwelt upon his Heart a great while, and he found himself very uneasy; It occurr'd on him, that certainly, as it had pleased God to make that young Woman give him the Alarm, and strike his Soul with the first Sense of his wretched Condition, he had certainly surnished her for his farther Assistance, and made her capable of giving him surther Help, Light and Directions in his Duty, and that he stood in the Way of his own Comforts all the while he was without her; nay, that he seemed to reject the Instrument by which God had done him so much Good, without inquiring whether God had designed her for his farther Benefit or no.

He reflected how suitable a Disposition she was of in religious Things, to the Design he had of keeping up a religious Family, and how admirable a Wise, a Mother, a Mistress, such a Lady must needs be to him, and his whole House; who now saw the Truth of the excellent Sentence she had often repeated to him, viz. 'That a religious Lise was the only Heaven upon Earth.' He discoursed all these Things with his faithful Counsellor, poor Wil-

liam, who pressed him by all the Persuasions be could use to go and make her his own; for it was the only Fear, William said, he had for him, that he would marry some Lady, who, having been brought up in the usual Levity of the Times, would pull him backward, rather than forward him in his religious Resolutions.

With these Thoughts he resolved to go to London, and apply himself immediately to his former Mistress, and obtain her for his own, if possible; but was exceedingly disappointed, when he found she and her Father, and all

the Family, were gone to the Bath.

.

e,

n,

g

18

r-

12-

in

n-

m-

im

n-

in

pa

, 2

ole

nce

ous

fed

11-

However he waited, and hearing of their Return, he went immediately to make his Vifit, without any Ceremony: When he found she was abroad, he fell to work ferioully with her Father; he told him, that the last Time he was there, he had indeed promised to wait on her agam, but had not yet done it, for which he was come now to alk her Pardon, and to give her the Reason of it, and hoped he would give him Leave to fee his Daughter again, notwithstanding what had past. Her Father told him, he had received an Account how his Daughter had us'd him; that he was in the Country when it happened, otherwife he should have concern'd himself to have secured him better Treatment; that he had resented it so already to his Daughter that he had scarce been in Speaking-Terms with her fince; that as to his Promife of coming again, he believed the was convinced that the had no Reason to expect it, feeing no Gentleman would care to be ill used twice upon the same Occasion. The young Gentleman answer'd, That he was very forry he should resent any Thing from his Daughter on his Account; that he was surprized to hear him say she had ill us'd him; that upon his Word she had not done or faid the least unbecoming Thing to him; that he was even then, when she did it, fully convinced of the Reasonableness of what she had said, and ten times as much, if that were possible, and also of the just Motives she had to say it to him; that if she had done less, the would have acted from meaner Principles than

he

no

ci

W

ft of

fit

te

H

th

On

be

T

an

N

Sil

ter

at !

ter

Wil

too

had

Wil

cla

fof

exp

her

WO

 H_0

Bro

let

mai

ven

Aff

acci

than he knew she was Mistress of, and that her Reasons were so good, and she so well maintained them, that he had neither then, or now, the least Thing to offer against them, and that his Business was not now to answer her Arguments, but to see if he could comply better with the just Demands that she then made, than he could before.

The Father answered with a great many Compliments and Excuses, and such like Discourses; but the Gentleman found that he neither relished the Reason of his Daughter's Refusal, or was aftected at all with all he could say to convince him how he had taken it; and Modely forbidding him to go farther in any Declaration about religious Matters, especially where he found there was no Taste of it, he declined saying any more about it, but he turn'd his Discourse to desiring another Interview with his Daughter upon the Terms of sormer Proposals; which the Father consenting to, they went together in the young Gentleman's Chariot to Hampstead, where the young Ladies were; and this was the Gentleman, who, as I observ'd, was come to the Door with their Father, just as they were above talking of him with their Aunt.

I had given an Account before, that they heard a Coach stop at the Gate, and that a Servant brought up Word, that their Father, and another Gentleman, was below Stairs: But they were surprized, you may be sure, when the eldest Sister, going down first, comes running up Stairs again, with the News, in short, that it was Mr-----, and

that their Father had brought him.

The Aunt, unwilling her Niece should appear in any Disorder, says to her, Come, Child, you two shall stay a little, and let me go down first; which the younger Sister was very glad of. It was easy to perceive, and the Passages already related will allow us to suppose, that although it was some Surprize to the young Lady to have him come thus suddenly and abruptly upon her, having not prepared her Thoughts, or resolved upon what Reception to give him, and not having the least Intimation from

her Father upon what Account he came, yet that she was not alarmed, as she used to be; the Scruples of her Conscience were all answered; her Jealousies of his Hypocrify were over; and her Affections had little or nothing to struggle with now, unless she might doubt his Resentment of Things past, and whether he came upon the old Account, or rather to perform his Promise, and make a Visit of the Ceremony only: However, she begg'd her Sister to speak to her Aunt, that they might stay at her House, and that she might receive his Visits there, because then she would have her Aunt to advise and consult with, on every Occasion, and then that she would put off their being left together that Night, that she might consider Things a little, and know the better how to receive him.

ts

13

d

y

e-

10

ne

th

ch

ng

ng

b-

28

ich

rd,

WO

nen

irs

and

any

y a

Sif-

the

al-

lave

not

pti-

rom

Her Sister went down, and sending for her Aunt into another Room, proposed the first to her; Let me alone, Niece, for that, fays the. So the other went up to her Sifter, and foon after the Father calling for his two Daughters, they went down into the Room. It was easy for her, at first Sight, to perceive that her Lover was not at all alter'd in his Affection to her; that he did not come to her with Refentment, or with Ceremony; for he flew to her. took her in his Arms, and told her, he came to fee if she had Goodness enough to pardon his not keeping his Word with her, in coming to wait on her again, and also to claim her Promise of staying for him. He spoke this so loftly, as not to be heard by the Company, and without expecting any Answer, turn'd about to pay his Respects to her Aunt: in doing which, he told her, he hoped she would give him Leave to wait upon her Niece at her House.

The Aunt took the Hint, and turning to the Father, Brother, fays she to him privately, I think, if you would let my Niece stay here for some Time, and let the Gentleman come to wait on her here, I would take care to prevent such little Scruples as you know interrupted that Assair before, and you will the sooner bring it to an End, according to your Mind. With all my Heart, says the Father;

Father: if we had done to before, I believe the had not

play'd the Fool as fhe did.

Upon this, turning themselves to the Company, she says aloud, Niece, I don't intend to lose your Company thus; I suppose, if this Gentleman designs to visit you, he won't think it a great Way to come to Hampstead, which, now the Roads are so good, is not above an Hour's Driving; and, I hope, we shall not make his Entertainment so ill, as to make him weary of coming hither. Her Niece said, That must be as her Father pleased to direct: I know that, said her sunt, and therefore I have got your Father's Consent already. They bow'd both to her in Token of Assent, and Night coming on, her Father talk'd of going away; so he told her, he would take another Opportunity to wait on her, which was what she had desired. And thus ended their first Meeting.

They had scarce dined the next Day, but, as he had said, he came to visit her, and they had the whole Asternoon to themselves; and, from that Day, they began to understand one another so well, that, in a sew Weeks, Matters began to draw to a Close. But, because some Part of their Discourse is necessary to finish the former Account, and may be as useful as it is entertaining, I shall first give some of the Particulars, as they occurred in Discourse between her and her Aunt and Sister, upon this

Occasion.

As the had advis'd with her Sister and Aunt upon every Particular, and especially with her Sister, from the first of it; so she made no Scruple to give them a sull Account of Things as they pass'd. It was one Morning, after the Gentleman had been above a Week in his new Addresses, that coming into her Aunt's Dressing room, she found her Sister there drinking Cossee with her Aunt, and her Sister began with her thus:

Eld. Sist. Well, Sister, you us'd to be free with a body, and tell one now and then how Things went with

te

fe

h

in

fo

th

eff

you; now we hear nothing from you: What, is it all to be a Secret?

Aunt. Nay, Niece, you ought not to press your Sister

to give an Account of fuch Things.

Eld. Sift. When she wanted Advice, Madam, she was

open enough.

ot

be

y

u,

an

nis

ng

er

re-

ey

m-

er,

ch

rst

nad

Af-

gan

ks,

me

ner

hall

in

this

eve-

the

full

rn-

his

ing-

with

h a

with

Aunt. For my Part, I wish her as well as I do my own Children; but I cannot desire her to give any Account of such Things, unless she wants Advice in any Thing;

and then she's a Judge of that.

To. Sift. Indeed, Madam, if I have not told any Thing, or every Thing, both to you and my Sifter, it has not been by way of Referve; I am ready to give you a full Account of all you defire; for there is nothing passes between us that need be concealed from you that are so near to me. As for my Sister, I told her every Passage before; and as for you, Madam, Did I not defire to be here, that I might consult and advise with you, and have your Directions in every Step? And I have wondered you have never ask'd about it before.

Eld. Sift. The chief Thing I want to know is, How you find him, as to the grand Affair of Religion; and,

Whether you think him a Hypocrite or no?

Aunt. Ay, that's what I am curious about.

Yo. Sift. I am but an ill Judge of Sincerity, especially in a Case where my Inclinations, you know, are partial.

Eld. Sift. Why, you were the nicest Creature alive before, Sister; and yet, you know, your Affections were the same Way then.

Aunt. Ay, Niece, what can you fay to that?

Yo Sift. Madam, my Sister takes it quite wrong!

Eld. Sift. How do I take you wrong, Sifter? Did not

you conclude him to be an Atheist?

Yo. Sift. But I never said he was a Hypocrite: If he had been no honester, than he was politick, I had been effectually deceived; for it was too true, as he said, if he had talk'd a little religiously, nay, if he had not openly profess'd

profes'd bis Contempt of all Religion, he had cheated

me, and I had never made any Objection.

Aunt. That's true; you are right. Cousin: But how stands it now? Are all the Stories you told me you heard at the Bath about him, true or no?

Yo. Sift. Truly, I believe they are.

Eld. Sift. Are you but at believe still? I would have had the bottom of them all out by this Time: What have

you been about all this while?

Yo. sift. Truly, we have spent all the Time almost about the great Difficulty of judging whether he is sincere or a Hypocrite; and we are scarce got through it yet, I assure you.

Eld. Sift. Why then I think my Sifter is mad: What Kind of Confession of Principles do you insist on, pray?

I hope you don't fet up to examine the Heart.

Yo. Sist. You run all upon Mistakes with me, Sister; the Dispute lies just the other Way; I am for allowing him to be sincere, but he will not grant that I have any Reason to do so: He says, that I ought to believe he is a Hypocrite.

Aunt. Come, Niece, let us have the whole Story of it; we shall then know how to judge of it together.

Yo. Sift. With all my Heart, Madam: You know he came to me last Tuesday Night, when you first left us together. After some Compliments, he repeated what he had said before, That he came to ask my Pardon for not coming again, as he had said he would: I told him, I did not expect him to come again; and, if I was to believe the Opinion of other People, I had used him so rudely, that it was not reasonable to think, that any Gentleman, that was so treated, would ever have come again, unless it was to affront me. He wonder'd, he said, who could pretend to say so; for, he assured me, he not only never said I used him ill, but never thought so, and certainly I would not say so to any body; for he was persuaded, he said, that I did neither do it on Purpose to use him ill, or believe it was ill Usage. I told him, he did me a

great

I

h:

no

fit

the

We

lig

great deal of Justice to say, I did not act on Purpose to affront him; but that I could not but say, I thought I had used him a little too rudely, for all that; and that if he thought so too, I was very ready to take this Opportunity to ask him Pardon, without so much as naming the Necessity I was in, on other Accounts, for doing what I did.

Aunt. You were very courtly in that Particular, Niece;

Pray, what did he fay to it?

at

ng

ny

IS

of

he

to-

he

not did

the

hat

hat

s it

ver

inly

ded,

him

ne 2

To. Sift. He told me, I had nothing to ask him Pardon for; and affured me, he had not been gone half an Hour from me, before he was convinced of the Justice of all I had faid; and how much Reason I had to refuse him, upon the Nicety which I had refused him uponadded, That he had a thousand Times since reproached himself with the Folly of his own Conduct at that Time. or that he could think it could recommend him to any Woman of Virtue and Sense, to boast of having no Thought or Sense of Religion: For, Madam, says he, had you taken no Notice of it, I should of Necessity have concluded, in a Quarter of an Hour after, that you had no Sense of Virtue or Religion yourself. Why, what if I had not? fuid 1; I had been but the more suitable to you, and you must have liked me the better for that. He return'd, No, Madam, just the contrary; for, tho' I own I had not thought of Religion myself, yet, had any Woman told me fo of herfelf, I should prefently have faid, she was no Match for a Gentleman; for no Man can be fo void of Sense, as well as of Religion, as not to know, that a Woman of no Religion is no Woman fit to make a Wise of: And this, says be, convinced me, that you were in the right to refuse me on that Account.

Aunt. It was a very ingenuous Acknowledgment, I confess; the Truth of it is so convincing, that I wish all the young Women who have their Settlements in View, would reflect seriously on this Point, That however wicked Men are, they are always willing to have sober, religious, and virtuous Wives; and 'tis very rarely, that

K

the worst Rake in Nature, if his Senses are in Exercise, desires to have a Wife loose like himself, ----- but pray

go on, Niece.

Yo. Sift. He told me, he was not gone a Quarter of an Hour from me, but this Reflection struck with Horror upon his Mind: What a dreadful Creature am I! Sure I am a horrid frightful Wretch! that a Woman of Sobriety and Religion was afraid to venture to take me, for fear of being ruined; and that the should think the declared ·War against Heaven, and joined herself to one of God's Enemies! He was going on, but I found his Speech stopped of a Sudden; at which I was a little furpriz'd. and asked him, If he was not well? He said, Yes; and endeavoured to hide the little Diforder he was in, and went on. He told me that I had been really very just to him, and he had Reason to thank me for it; and that he had defired my Sifter to express his Mind full on that Account; which he hoped she had done. I told him, 'I could not now enter upon an Apology for what I had faid to him so long ago; that, if I had treated him rudely, or severely, I was very forry; but that what I did was occasioned, as he knew very well, by his making such open Declarations, and fuch as I thought he really had no Occasion for, concerning his Aversion to, and Ignorance of all Religion; and that it was really a dreadful Thing to think of marrying on fuch Terms. He replied, That if I had faid less than I did, he must necessarily, when he came to his Senses, have had a meaner Opinion of me than he had; and that it was really the Reproaches I had given him, and the excellent Reasons I had given him for my Resolutions of rejecting him, that had now brought him back to me, and had made him resolve to have no Woman on Earth but me, if I would but revoke the Resolutions I had taken against bim: For nothing less, than so much Religion and Virtue, could ever make him happy.

Aunt. If he was fincere in this, I affure you, Niece, it was a high Compliment upon Religion, as well as upon

your Conduct,

(1

h

Yo. Sift. I told him, That, as the Reason I had for using him so, was thus approved by himself, he bound me to preserve the same Resolution, on the Hazard of his having the less Esteem for me. He confess'd that was very true, unless he could convince me the Cause was remov'd; which he saw no hopes of; and that was the Reason that he came to visit me again, with so little Encouragement, that he knew not what to think of it.

Eld. Sist. What could he mean by that? Why, sure, then, all we have heard must be false, and he is the same

Man as ever.

d

ft

at

at

·I

ad

e-

id

ch

no

ice

ng

nat

be

me

had for

bim

nan

is I

uch

e, it

pon

To sift. I was greatly startled at his Words, and looked steadily at him, but could judge nothing from his Countenance: But it grew late, and he took his Leave, falling into some other cursory Talk, and left me, I confess, in the greatest Confusion of Thought imaginable; for I was dreadfully asraid he would declare himself to have no Sense of Religion on his Mind still; and then I was in a worse Condition than at first, having thus admitted a second Treaty with him.

Aunt. I thought, Child, you was a little perplexed on Tuesday Night; but I took it to be only a little Thought-fulness more than ordinary, which is usual on such Oc-

casions.

Yo. Sift. When he came again the next Night, he made a Kind of an Apology for having left me in more Diforder than he was us'd to do: For to tell you true; Madam, fays he, I was not able to go on with what I was faying to you, neither am I now, fays he, feeing I am come to wait on you, and yet have effectually that the Door against myself. I told him, I did not perhaps rightly understand him, unless he would explain himself: Why (says he) I have first told you sincerely, how absolutely I approve the Resolution you took against me and yet owned, and do still, that I am no way able to convince you that the Cause is removed. I told him, that I thought he was not just to himself; and that the same Thing, whatever it was, that had Power to convince him that I

K

was under a Necessity to refuse him on that Occasion, would certainly assist him to remove the Cause. He turned short upon me. But, Madam (said he) did I not make Conditions with you, that whenever I talk'd of it, you should take me for a Hypocrite? And did I not positively declare to you, that I would deceive you if I could.

Eld. Sift. Now I know what he meant.

To. Sist. Ay, so did I too; but he run it up so high against himself, that I could not answer a Word, unless I would have turn'd the Tables, as it were, against myself, and courted him, by telling him how well I was satisfied of his Sincerity; so that, in short, I was quite puzzled: For what could I say to a Man that did, as it were, bid me believe him to be a Hypocrite?

Aunt You had a nice Case before you, Cousin; pray

what faid you to it?

To. Sift. I told him, very coldly, I was under a Necesfity of believing every Thing he said, because he had been so sincere with me all along; and I begg'd him therefore not to tell me feriously now that he was a Hypocrite; and that the Cause of my refusing before to talk with him was not removed; that I hoped it was otherwife, but should despair of it, if it came from his own Mouth; and that if I was affured from his own Mouth, that he came to deceive me, he must needs know I had nothing else to do, but to act as I did before, which he had own'd I had Reason for. No, Madam (says he) I do not fay, I defire to deceive you: But, I fay, that having told you I would, you ought to believe I defign it; and I see no Room to convince you I am not an Hypocrite, feeing I promis'd you I would be so; and I know not whether I dare tell you that I am not so, even in the best of me.

Eld Sift. I could have put an End to all this Nicety in

C

ri

W:

th

two Words.

Yo. Sift. Then you will the more easily tell me how I shall do it.

Eld. Sift. Why I would have told him, that though I had

had not so much Concern for him to busy myself to enquire after his Conduct, yet I had not so little, as not to be glad to know, by other Hands than his own, that he was no Hypocrite, and that I rejoiced for his Sake to hear that his Eyes were opened to that which alone could make him the happiest Man alive.

You Sift. Then I must at the same Time have told him, that my Scruples were all over about him; which was as much as to tell him I would have him whenever he pleafed to take me; but I ha'n't learned that Way of talk-

ing yet.

d

m

lk

r-

vn

h,

ad

he

I

av-

it;

po-

WO

the

y in

wI

gh I

quaintance, and so much pressing, I do not think you could have charg'd yourself with being forward.

Yo. sift. Well then you will the better like what has

happen'd fince, Madam.

Aunt. With all my Heart; then pray go on, my Dear. To. Sift. Why, Madam, this took up the first three or four Nights of our Discourse: The Night before last he began a little more feriously, and came closer to the Thing itself; He told me, he had made himself very melancholy with me, the two last Times he was with me; for he thought, that instead of courting me to have him, he had taken a great deal of Pains to court me to refuse I told him, I thought fo too; and that I him again. confess'd I had been a little concern'd about it, because I could by no Means understand him. He told me, it proceeded from the just Reflexion he made on his foolish Discourse two Years ago, viz. 'That he wish'd he had counterfeited religious Discourse, and that he would certain-' ly have cheated me if he could, and did not doubt but he could have done it effectually.' Those Words, he faid, flew in his Face, when he went to fay any thing feriously to me; and persuaded him that I would believe he was only counterfeiting ferious things on purpose to deceive me. I answered, he might reproach himself with those Things, but I did not lay any Stress on them; for I believed he had too much Honeity, whether it pro-

ceeded

ceeded from Religion or no, to offer to deceive me in a Thing, in which he own'd fo ingenuously I was right. Then he told me with the greatest Affection in his Discourse that ever I saw in my Life, that he must confess, as he faid before, that my rejecting him, as I had done, had made Impressions on his Mind quite different from what he had before; but that he found it the hardest Thing in the World to express what had happen'd to him on that Account, and the Thoughts of those Things which had taken up his Mind since that; only this he would own to me, that I was in the right; that he had most notoriously exposed himself to me, and that he had perfectly the same Opinion now of those things, which I had before, viz. I hat a religious Life was the only Heaven upon Earth; but he could go no farther, he faid, nor could he answer for himself, how far such Thoughts might carry him, or express to me the Particulars that had lain upon his Mind about them; and how far what he had faid would fatisfy me, he did not know. I told him, I hoped he did not think I fet up for a Judge of the Particulars; that my Objection before lay against a general Contempt of all Religion; that it was my Terror to think of marrying an Enemy to God, one that had no Sense of the common Duties we all owe to him that made us: but that I never expect a Confession of Faith from him, or any Man, in such a Case. He told me, he thought it required more Affurance than he was Master of, to talk any thing of himself that Way, at least till there were more Intimacy between us; that he thought. religious Things (talk'd of in that manner) received an Injury from the very Discourse, and that it was next Door to boasting of them, which was the worst Kind of Hypocrify; and if he could fay no more of himself but this, he hoped I would take it for a sufficient Testimony of the Alteration of his Thoughts, viz. That he loved me for the Honour I paid to Religion, and for that Steadiness which had made me refuse him before. I told him, I faw his Difficulty, and that I would abate him the Trouble

Trouble of entering into Particulars, which I found he was too modest to relate, and which however I was not quite a Stranger to; and that I defired we might speak no more of a Thing which I knew it was difficult for him to be free in. He blush'd as red as Fire, when I faid I was not a Stranger to the Particulars, which he declined to express, and faid not one. Word for a good While. I told him, I knew it was a Point that could not come from a Man's own Mouth; that I did not defire it, and would make him easy, so far as to tell him, I was fully fatisfied he was no Hypocrite, and hoped he would give himself no more Trouble about it. He took me in his Arms, and told me very affectionately, that I had faid that of him, that he would give all the World to be able to fay of himself; that however he hoped to be beholden to me for more than that; and as I had given him the first View of the Beauty of a religious Life, he expected a great deal more from my Affistance and Example, in pursuing the Steps of it, I told him, that I begg'd of him we might avoid all religious Compliments, for they were the oddest Things in Nature; that he quite mistook me; that it was not because I thought myfelf capable of guiding in religious Matters, that I infilt ed on the Necessity of not marrying a Man void of Religion, but from a due Sense of just the contrary, viz. The Want I should be in of being guided and affisted in religious Things upon all Occasions myself: That it would be a fatal Mistake the other Way, and greatly to my Difadvantage, to have him expect more from me than he would find; and that on the contrary, I thought I had now so much less Religion than he, that he ought to refuse me now, for the same Reason that I refused him before.

t

n

d

25

st

nt.

in

xt

of

ut

19

ed.

a+

ld

he

This is the Sum of our Affair, and thus it stands, only with this Addition, that he told me a very pleasant Story which happen'd at a Chocolate-house near the Court, which is so useful, as well as diverting, that I cannot but relate it to you.

K 4

Aunt.

* Aunt. That Story is fit to be read for a Lecture of Instruction to all the young Gentlemen of this Age. Well, Niece, you are a happy Girl.

Yo. Sift. Why, Madam?

Aunt. Only in being courted by a Gentleman of the greatest Sincerity, Modesty, and Piety, that ever I met with in my Life.

Yo. Sift. And would you advise me, Madam, to have

him then?

Aunt. Ay, Child, without any more Difficulty, if you defire to be the happiest Woman alive, and an Example and Encouragement to all the young Women in England, for the rejecting profane and irreligious Husbands.

Thus far, I think, contains all the useful Part of this Story, only adding, that it was not long after this, both the Agreement and Settlement being all in a Readiness, the Father and all Friends affenting, they were married, and lived afterwards the happiest Couple that can be imagined; having a sober, regular, well-governed Family; a most pleasant, comfortable, agreeable Conversation with one another; suitable in Temper, Desires, Delights; and, in a Word, in every Thing else; and, which made them compleatly happy, they were exemplary in Piety and Virtue to all that knew them.

^{*} Here she tells them the Story of the two Beaus and the Lord discoursing about the Suitableness of a religious Life to the Life of a Gentleman.



RELIGIOUS COURTSHIP.

PART II.

E have seen the happy Conduct of the youngest of the three Daughters of the Gentleman, whose Family this Book began with,
and the comfortable Success of it: The setond Daughter, from the Beginning, acted upon other
Principles, or rather, indeed, upon no Principles at all;
yet her History may, perhaps, be no less fruitful of Instruction, than the other, though something more tragical, as to her own Part of it.

h

e

Y

She declared to her Sister, as appears in the Beginning of her Story, that she would not trouble herself, when it came to her Turn, what Religion the Gentleman was of, or whether he had any Religion or no, if she had but a good Settlement; and now we shall see her be as good as her Word.

Her Father, whose Character I have sufficiently spoken to already, having had, for many Years, a considerable Trade into Italy, where he once lived, there came an English Gensleman to visit him, who had been formerly Cotemporary with him, and had long been his Correspondent and Factor there, viz. at Leghorn; and who, being grown very rich, was come to England, resolving to settle here. There were some Accounts, it seems depending

pending between them, which they had appointed a Day to fettle and balance, in order to exchange Releases; which being all finished in the Morning, the Father of these Ladies takes his Factor into his Coach, and carries him Home to Dinner with him, where the old Gentleman entertained him very handsomely, and where he had an Opportunity to see the two Maiden Daughters; for the Youngest, who had been married some Time, was gone into Hampshire to her Country Seat with her Husband.

. 1

ſ

This Leghorn Merchant no sooner saw and conversed a little with the Ladies, but he took a Fancy to the youngest, and from that Time resolved to make her his Wise. It was not long before he let them know his Mind; and, having made very handsome Proposals to her Father, he (the Father) received him with a Frankness suitable to their long Intimacy and Acquaintance, and told him, With all his Heart, if his Daughter and he could agree.

Before I bring them together, it is proper, to the Relish of the Story, to take a little Notice of the Characters of the two young Persons, of whose Story we ought to have a general Idea, that we may not be left to gather it

up flowly among the Particulars.

The young Lady was very fober, virtuous to the nicest Degree, extremely well bred, and wonderfully goodhumour'd; she was likewise a very lovely, beautiful Perfon, the handsomest of the three Sisters, beyond all Comparison: As to Religion, she had a very good Foundation of Knowledge, and had done nothing to make it be supposed se was not truly religious in Practice; but she was not altogether fo grave and ferious as her eldest Sister; much less was she so devout and strict as her younger Sifter that was married, as might be observed from what palfed between them at first: Her temper was sprightly and gay; and, tho' she govern'd herself so, that she gave every one Room to fee, that she was one that had a true Sense of Religion at Bottom, and a Fund of good Principles and good Notions in her Mind, yet she was young and merry, and did not tie herfelf up fo feverely in fuch Things

as her Sisters had done; which, though it was no Part of her Happiness in the Assair before her, yet it render'd her very agreeable to her Father; and particularly, it made the Assair with this Gentleman much easier to her Father, and he had much less Trouble with her, than he had with her two Sisters.

The Gentleman was, as I have observed, an Italian Merchant, a very handsome, agreeable Person, persectly well-bred, having liv'd Abroad, and feen a great deal of the World: He was also a Man of excellent Parts and Sense, talk'd admirably well almost to every Thing that came in his way, spoke several Languages, and, in short, was not a complete-bred Merchant only, but much of a Gentleman; and to all this was to be added, that he was very fober, grave, and oftentimes, as Occasion offer'd, his Discourse upon religious Affairs discover'd him to be very ferious and religious. As to his Estate, it was not very well only, but extraordinary; he was, indeed a little too old, having lived Abroad about 22 Years, and was about fo much above twenty, which was the Age of the Lady. However, as this was an Advantage in many other Ways, as in his Judgment and Experience in the World, the Father made no Scruple at all of it, nor did his Daughter enquire much after it.

In a word, having been introduced to the young Lady, the must have been a Woman of much more Nicety and Scruple than she profes'd herself to be, if she had disliked any Thing in his Person or Circumstances; and therefore having kept her Company for some Weeks, Things began to draw towards a Close, when one Evening, after the Gentleman had been with her, and was gone away, her ekself Sister and she happen'd to meet; and the following Dialogue between them may farther explain the

Cafe.

n

-

IS

d

d

DIALOGUE I.

Eld. Sist. When are we to go and buy Wedding-Cloaths?

Sist Nay, I don'tknow; e'en when

you will, I think: I don't know what we stay for, not I.

Eld. Sift. Prithee let's have done with it then; I want

to call him Brother; then I can talk freely to him.

Sift. Why you may call him Brother now, can't you? You fee he calls you Sifter already, as naturally as if we were all of a Breed.

Eld. Sift. Ay, fo did somebody else, you know; and yet madea two-year's piece of Work of it afterwards for all that*.

Sist. Yes, yes, I remember it; but I'll assure you I am none of those; I'll either make an End of it one Way, or make an end of it another Way, in less than so many Months

Eld. Sift. Perhaps your Objections are not so just as her's.

Sift. I don't enter into her Scruples, I affure you.

Eld. Sift. I hope you have not her Occasion.

Sift. Nay, I don't know what Occasion she had, not I. Eld. Sift. Nay, hold, Sister; don't say so neither; without doubt her Occasion was very just; and you have the same Obligation upon you, but I hope you have not the same Occasion.

Sift. I know not what you mean by Obligation; I

have no Obligation at all upon me, as I know of.

Eid. Sift. Why do you say so, Sister? I mean the Obligation, which is upon us all from the Charge my Mother gave us upon her Death-bed, about our marrying religious Husbands.

Sift. I look upon what my Mother faid to be good Coun.

* She means the Gentleman that courted the third Sifter.

sel, which we should give its due Weight to; but I do not take it to be a Command that binds me absolutely in Duty to my Mother's Words: Duty certainly ends, when Death separates.

Eld. Sift. I know not whether it does or no, Sister.

Sist. I think you are too superstitious that way, Sister. Eld. Sist. Well, but suppose it to be but as Advice, yet it has a double Force with it: First, as it came from a tender, dear, and most affectionate Mother, who not only most passionately loved us, but had an excellent Judgment to direct her to give us the best Counsel: And, Secondly, as our own Judgment and Conscience must testify with her, that what she enjoin'd us to observe, is the most reasonable and necessary Thing for us to do, that can be imagined for our own Advantage, and as well for our Happiness here as hereafter.

Sift. You lay a greater Stress upon it than I do, I confess: If my Mother had been alive indeed, I should have thought myself obliged to be guided by her Directions, and her Injunctions would have been positive Commands; but then she would have been able to judge of particular Circumstances, and would have given her Advice accord-

ingly.

n

t

e

n

r

y

S.

1-

e

ie

I

b-

n.

Eld. Sift. But her Advice to us was therefore suited to her present State of Absence, and went no farther than to a Case described by its own Circumstances, and which nothing can alter; because the Obligation supposes the Circumstance, and where the Circumstance is not, the Obligation ceases.

sift. You talk fo learnedly, I want an Explanation.

eld. Sist. No, Sister, you don't want an Explanation, I am sure; but you are disposed to lay it all aside, as a Thing you have no need of; however, I'll explain myself in a Word speaking; Our Mother warn'd us against marrying Men of no Religion, that is, Men that made no Profession of a Reverence to God and his Worship; this Want of a Religious Profession is the Circumstance which I speak of; if the Circumstance does not appear, the Ad-

vice ceases; for our Mother knew we could not judge of Sincerity.

Sift. Well; fo then if a Man tells me he is religious, it

k

V

ir

n

ty

h

f

th

is

to

ne

he

ge

pr

E

th

bo

W

is well enough, whether he fpeaks Truth or no-

Eld. Sift. What need we talk of this? I hope you have an Affurance of the contrary in Mr.

Sift No, not I, indeed; what Assurance can I have? He seems to be a sober Man, that's all I know of it.

Eld. Sift. Well, and I would know more of it, however,

if I were you.

Sift. Why I do know something more of it too, now I think of it; for we were talking of such Things one Night, when he happened to mention Sir Robert----, and he spoke of him with a great deal of Indignation; he said he was a horrid atheistical Wretch, and that he could not bear his Company; for he was always making a Jest of sacred Things, bantering all Religion in such a Manner, that no sober Mind, could abide it without Horror.

Eld. Sist. Well, there's something it that, I assure you. Sist. Why, I take it to be a plain Declaration, that he has a just Reverence for Religion, as my Sister took the contrary in her Lover for a Declaration of his having no Religion at all.

Words, and that he had not troubled his Head about it,

and did not intend to do it.

Sift. Well then, and this Gentleman has told me he has; for he owns he has so much Regard for Religion, that he cannot hear it ridiculed and bantered without Horror.

Eld Sist. That is something, I confess, in general: But--Sist. But what? What would you have me do? Must
I examine his Principles and Opinion? Shall I ask him to
say his Catechism? If I should talk on that Fathion to him
now, what Kind of a catechetical Wife will he think I
shall make? He'll think I shall be a School-mistress rather than a Wife.

ter, forfooth, you need not be fo with him, I hope; nor need

need I tell you how to manage such a Point: But I war rant you I would find it out, what his Opinion was one Way or another: why he may be a Papist for aught you know yet of him; some of them are very religious in their Way, and speak very reverently and seriously of Religion in general.

Sist. Let him be a Papist and he will. I am sure I can never ask him such a Question; but however, I am pretty well satisfied of that too; for I heard him say once, he had been at Church: And another Time accidentally speaking about Religion, he declared he was a Member of

the Church of England, as by Law established.

Eld. Sist. Well, you are an easy Lady; a little Matter satisfies you: I should presently have said, I hope, Sir, you mean the Protestant Church of England: Why do you not imagine the Roman Catholicks think the Popish Church is the only Church of England that is established by Law?

Sist. Sure, Sister, you take all the World to be Hypocrites and Cheats; I never can suspect any Gentleman, that bears the Character of an honest Man, would set up to impose upon me with such equivocal Speeches; why, I

never heard such a vile Distinction in my Life.

Eld. Sist. Have you not? Why then I have: I have heard, that in King Charles the Second's Time, People in general were deluded with that very Expression in all their publick Speeches, Proclamations, Declarations, &c. promising always to preserve and maintain the Church of England, as established by Law; and yet all that while they meant the Popish Church.

Silt. These are remote Things, Sister; for my Part, I have no Mistrust; I am honest myself, and I suspect no-

body.

t

d

0

t

Œ

n I

.

Éld. Sist. It is a Thing of no moment, Sister; I would be sure.

Sift. Not I; I have no room to suspect.

Etd. Sift. Then you do not answer the Obligation you were under to my Mother's Desire.

Sift.

Sift. Yes, I do; for I think I have good Reafon to be-

lieve him a very serious religious Gentleman.

Eld. Sift. But you know my Mother engaged us to examine Particulars, and not to marry any Man, how religious foever he feemed also, unless he was of the same Opinion in Religion with ourselves.

Sift. In that I think my Mother went too far, Sifter.

Eld. Sift. My Mother gave us a great many Examples of the Mifery that has followed in the relation of Husband and Wife, by Reason only of Differences in Opinion.

Sift. It must be then where there was but little Reli-

gion on either Side.

Eld. Sist. I do not know that neither; you and I know fome Families, more than one or two, where they are all at Daggers-drawn about Opinion, and the Families are ruin'd as to their Peace, and yet both are very religious too, nay zealous in their Way; and the more the Zeal, the more the Strife.

Sift. There may be Zeal, but there is no Charity then:

and what's any Religion without Charity?

keep Pace with Religion, and every one is apt to think themselves in the right, and to reproach the Sincerity of those that differ from them; therefore our Mother earnestly press'd us to make that Point sure before we fix'd our Choice for our Lives.

sift. It is a fine I hing to talk of, but hard to be follow'd: What have I to do with his Opinion? And what can I say to him, if he tells me he is of one Opinion, and should be of another? You, nor no young Body alive, can prevent being impos'd upon, it a Man finds it for his Pur-

pole to deceive us.

Eld. Suft. Well, Sister, you trample upon all Caution; you are one of them that seem perfectly indifferent, whe-

ther you are deceived, or no.

sist. No. Sister, I am not willing to be deceived, you fee; I have had a general Discovery of his being a Man religiously inclin'd, that has a Reverence for the Worship

of God, and the Being of God; nay, you cannot but remember, how the other Night at Supper he discours'd very gravely, and I assure you, to me it was very agreeable about the Men of the Town first pretending to be Atheists, and to deny the Being of a God; and the next

Minute profanely swearing by his Name.

Eld. sift. All this is true, and clears you from the first Scruple; so far, I may grant, you are within my Mother's first Injunction, Not to marry a Man that does not profess to be religious in general; but that is but one Part: What say you to the other, Not to marry any Man, however professing himself to be religious, that is not of the same Opinion with yourself?

Sist. You will carry every Thing up to the Extremity; but, however, I have a Way for that too; and you shall not charge me with slighting my Mother's Advice.

Eld. Sift. What Way have you got? I doubt, 'tis but

an odd one.

n.

1-

W

all

re

us

al,

n:

IVS

nk

of

arx'd

ol-

hat

and

can ur-

on; he-

you

Man thip Sift. Why, if he will not be of my Opinion, I'll be of his Opinion; and so we will agree one Way, if we can't t'other.

Eld. Sist. That's boldly said, and, I must own to you, signifies, you are yet to chuse in your own Opinion: Pray, what if he should be a Roman Catholick? as I hinted before; you know, he has lived in Italy.

sist. Well if he should be a Christian Catholick, I am a Catholick Christian; so we need not fall out for all that.

Eld. sift. I persuade myself, you are not so indifferent as you make yourself, or else (which I hope rather) you are jesting with me, or you talk this upon a Supposition, that your are sure he is a Protestant.

sist. Well, you are in the right there too; I cannot entertain such Thoughts of him; besides, my Father told

me he was a Protestant.

Eld. Sist. It is our Missortune, Sister, that my Father does not much concern himself about those Things; he leaves us to our Fate.

Sist. And is that our Misfortune, say you? I do not

fee it, I confess; for I think 'tis our Business to chuse for ourselves: And I observe, where Fathers are so very strait-lac'd, and confine their Children to such and such Particulars in the Husbands or Wives they shall chuse, their Children generally chuse without much Regard to those Injunctions, or else sly directly in the Face of them, and go quite contrary.

Duty, as if, because Children do not regard the Care and Concern of their Parents in their Marriages, therefore they ought to do so; and that in was not the Duty of Parents to direct them, or to concern themselves about it.

sift. I don't inquire what is the Duty of Parents; 1 am

fpeaking of what is the Practice of Children.

Eld. Sist. But you do not justify that Practice, I hope? Sist. I think, take one Time with another, Children do as well, when they trust to their own Directions, I mean when they chuse with Judgment: Pray, what would become of us, if we were just to follow our Father's Directions? You know, he would direct us to take the first

that comes, if he liked but the Settlement.

Eld. Sist. That's a wrong Way of arguing, Sister, That, because our Father neglects it, therefore Children are not the better for such Parents as do their Duty, and that shew a just Concern for the religious Happiness of their Children, in settling them in the World.

Sift I do not see much Difference, I say; but some-

times one do as well as the other.

Eld. Sift. Yes, there is this Difference, Sifter, That, where the Parents act right, the Children are feldom ruin'd, unless it be by their own wilful Obstinacy.

sist. And sometimes Children are ruin'd, let the Parents do their best; nay, sometimes the Parents themselves

know not what to direct.

Eld. Sift. You may as well fay, that, because Doctors

die, nobody should take Physick.

sift. Every one has Eyes to chuse for themselves; I don't think the Proverb has any Weight in this Case, that

Love is blind: Folks may easily see the Difference between a religious Man and an Atheist, without their Parents.

Eld. sist. But it is a Matter of such Weight, and so irrecoverable when done, that we ought to see with as many Eyes as we can; and a careful, religious Parent is a good Scout to look out for us, a good Pilot to steer us, and a good Counsellor to advise us.

Sift. I don't see the Want of it, perhaps, so much as you do; I see, sometimes, the very Mistake of the Parents is

the Cause of the Ruin of the Children.

Eld. Sist. I must confess, I do see the Want of it, and I think it is a sad Thing to be left, so as we are, without the Guide of our Parents, for all that; and if we, in particular, should be ruined by it, our Father would have small Satisfaction in his own Conduct: 'Tis such Management makes Children slight their Father's Directions, as they do.

Sift. Well, our Father does kind Things for us anow

ther Way, however.

m

es

rs

Eld. sift. I don't desire to reflect upon my Father; but, if his Care was as much employed in chusing religious Husbands for us (since he will have us marry) as it is in getting Portions for us, we should find the Advantage of it much more to his future Satisfaction, and our own.

· Sift. We must take the more Care of it ourselves.

Eld. Sift. Why, that is the Point I am upon; I wish you would do so then, Sister; for it is your Case that I am upon.

Sist. I have done it, I think; I see no Room to object.

Eld. sist. I can say no more, Sister; you are resolved,
I see, and must go on; but you will buy your Experience
at a terrible Price; and if, upon the Trial, you should be
mistaken, you will think of this Discourse hereafter.

Sift. What would you have me do?

eld. Sift. Do! I would enter into a ferious Discourse of religious Matters with him; I would know how we were to live together, whether as Heathens, or as Christians; I would find out his Principles, if he has any, or

L 2

find

find out that he has none; This is not Catechifing him; nor is there any Thing indecent in it. You are not asham'd to inquire into his Estate, and make Provision for your-felf out of it by a good Jointure; and will you be ashamed to inquire after that, which is of ten thousand Times the Consequence! Sure, you can never go on hoodwinked at all Hazards thus in that Part that is for the Happiness of your Life, Soul, and Body; besides, had you not our Sister's Example before you?

Sist. Why, I tell you, it is clear to me, that he is a Man that has a Sense of Religion upon his Mind: I gave you an Instance of it in his Detestation of Sir Robert and his Practices: If my Sister could have had but so much Satisfaction as that, she would never have refus'd my Bro-

ther .----

Eld. Sist. You wrong my Sister, I assure you; she did not come so far indeed: because she came to a clear Discovery that he had no Religion at all, which was the first Point; but I can assure you, if she had got over that Point, she would have enquired farther; for 'tis a poor Satisfaction that is founded upon Negative Religion only.

sift. If we expect to fearch into Politives, as the World goes now, I think we put a Hardship upon ourselves that

we are not obliged to.

Eld. Sist. But certainly it is our Business to do it, if we expect to live happily; for there are a great many Men now-a-days that are not Atheists, and that abhor bantering of Religion, or making a Jest of sacred Things; and yet have nothing at all in them that is sit to be called Religion.

Sist. Well, I am not to examine the Inside; a small deal of Hypocrify will conceal the Heart; if he be not a religious Man, the worst will be his own, I cannot find it

out.

eld Sift. Dear Sister, I should not say so much, but that methinks you do not attempt to find it out; you do not inquire after it; I do not find you have exchang'd six Words upon the Subject.

Sift.

Sift. Why, I tell you what he said about Sir Robert---

gave me a good Impression of him,

Eld. Sist. O Sister! you are soon satisfy'd; you would not be so easy in the matter of his Estate; it seems you will trust your Soul upon lighter Security than you will your Portion.

Sift. How do you mean?

that he has an Estate, or that you shall be provided for; but you must have his Estate appear, your Part be settled, and the Land bound to you; it is not enough for him to say, I have such and such a Revenue by the Year, and you shall have such a Part of it if I die before you; but you will have it under Hand and Seal, so that he shall not be able to go back.

Sift. Well, and should I not do fo?

Eld. Sist. Yes, yes; but I allude only to it, and observe how less anxious you are, how much easier satisfied, how sooner secure, about the main Article that constitutes the Happiness of your Life, and of your Family, if ever you

have one, than about your Estate.

as if all my Felicity confisted in this one Question, Whether my Husband be a religious Man or no? Nay, as if it consisted in his being of the same Opinion in Religion as I am of, as if I could not be religious, tho' my Husband was not so; or, in a Word, as if I could not go to Heaven

without my Husband.

Eld. Sist. No, Sister, it is you that run it too high; I do not say you cannot go to Heaven without your Husband; or you cannot be religious without your Husband; but I do say you cannot go comfortably thro' the Journey thither without him, or he without you. A woman is to be a Help-mate, and a Man is to be the same; now a Husband will be a sorry Help to a Wife, if he is not a Help in the religious Part of her Life; and a sorry Help indeed in the religious Part, if he has no Sense of it himfelf.

Sift.

Siff. But I tell you he has a Sense of it, and an Affection to it.

Eld. Sift. Well, but it will hold in the other Part of the Question too: Suppose he has, yet if his Sense of Religion is not the fame with, or agreeable to your Sense of it; if he thinks you are going the wrong Way, and you think he is going the wrong Way, one pulls this Way, and the other pulls that Way, in Religion; what will this come to in the Family, Sister? Have you consider'd that?

Sift. Yes, yes, I have considered it very well.

Eld. Sift. I doubt it, Sifter; I doubt you have only con-

sidered of it so as to resolve not to consider of it.

Sift. I have confidered it so far, as to see that I can do nothing in it any farther; I cannot enter into a Debate about Principles; tell him what my Opinion is, and ask him what his Opinion is, and try before-hand whether they agree or no; I tell you I don't think 'tis my Business, any more than the talking to him of our Settlement; that's the Father's Part to do; fure my Father won't

bring a Heathen to me!

Eld. Sift. It is true, and that is our Misery, that, as I faid before, we have not a Father to concern himself in that Part for us; but I do not think it is fuch an improper Thing for you to do. Sure I could some Way or other bring it in, that I would make some Guess at him: Why, you have never offer'd at it in the least, neither has he thewn you any Thing of it; I do not so much as find that he has ever gone to Church with us, fince he has appear d here fo publickly.

Sift. Why no, that's true; and I wonder'd he did not indeed, especially last sunday, when he din'd with us; but

he made an Excuse that I thought was sufficient.

Eld. Sift. Well, and would not I have laugh'd at him at Night, and ask'd him, if ever he us'd to go to Church? or whether he went to Church that Sunday, or no?

sift. Why, fo I did; and he told me he was obliged to go that Day to wait upon the Marquis de Monteleon, the

spanish Embassador.

obliged to go to the Popish Chapel with him too; for the Embassador never fails at that Time of Day. I'll lay an hundred Pounds he went to Mass with him: there's a Clue for you, find out that now, and your Business is done.

sift. Dear Sister, you are strangely possess'd with Mr.

of it? you perfectly fright me about it.

Eld. Sist. No, indeed, I must confess I have not the least Ground for it; I won't do him so much Injustice: but if I were in your Case, I would be satisfy'd about it; I would ask him downright in so many Words.

Sift. I would not alk him such a Question for an hun-

dred Pounds.

Eld. Sift. And I would not marry him without asking him, for ten thousand.

Sift. Why if I should, and he were really a Papist, do you think he would be such a Fool to tell me?

Eld. Sift. Perhaps, he may be so honest as not to deny

what he is not asham'd of.

sift. I should hate him the Moment he confess'd it, not for being a Papist, but for shewing he had so little Concern for me, as to venture to own it.

Eld. Sift. So that you think he ought rather to deny his Religion, and disown his Principles, than venture your

Displeasure?

sist. I should think he was very indifferent, whether I was displeased or no, or that he presumed upon my being so engaged to him, that I could not go off; either of which I should take for an unsufferable Insolence.

Eld. Sift. So you would have him conceal his Principles, and discover them when you could not help yourself; pray

which would be the greater Infult?

Sist. You strive to push me into a Streight, but I have a Medium again that delivers me from the Necessity on either Side, and that is, to shake off the Suspicion; and seeing you have no real Ground for it, I cannot see why I should terrify myself with a mere Jealousy.

L 4 Eld.

Eld. Sift. I own I have no Ground to suppose him a Papist; but I would never marry any Man in the World, without knowing what his Principles are; 'tis no Satisfaction to me, to say he's not an Atheist, he is not a profane Despiser of Religion: Negatives are a poor Foundation, Sister, to go upon in a Case of such Consequence, if he is of any Religion, he should tell it me, or I would have nothing to say to him.

sift. Why, I told you, he faid in particular, that he was

of the Church of England, as by Law establish'd.

Eld. Sist. Why first, dear Sister, I told you that's nothing but what any Papist may say, even without a Dispensation; but however it seems he did not say that, but in a way of Discourse to other People; he did not say so seriously, in Answer to any Inquiry of yours, or to give you Satisfaction.

Sift. No, that's true; I have not defired any Satisfaction of him; for I take those Casual Occasional Discoveries of himself to have more of Nature in them, and to be less liable to Suspicion, than a formal studied Answer to a jealous or doubting Question; and I have many Reasons

for my Opinion too.

Eld Sift. Why that may be true; but I cannot think that fuch occasional curfory Speeches can have solid Foundation enough to fatisfy you in a Thing of fuch Moment; and I think I have the Testimony of the Fathers of our Reformation on my Side, who, without Doubt, faw in it the great Weight that lies on this Part, viz. Of the Advantage and Necessity that there is, that Husband and Wife should be of the same Opinion in Religion one with another; when they appointed, with the Office of Matrimony, that the Communion be given to the marry'd Couple at every Wedding; that it might appear, not only that they both made a Profession of the Christian Religion, but that they both agreed in the Profession of the same Principles, and join'd together in the same Communion with the Reform'd Protestant Churches, and with one another. And I think this is enough to convince you of the Justice

ti

of our Mother's Injunctions, that we should not marry any Man, how religious soever he was, unless he was of the same Opinion in Religion with ourselves; or, as I observed above, that, as was the Custom, the Man and the Wife might communicate together.

sift. I take that to be done principally to prevent Protestants marrying with Papists, and to discover the Fraud, if there was any; you see that Practice is left off now.

Eld sist. I know it is left off, fince other and leffer Differences among Protestants have made mutual communion more Difficult; but I think the Reason of the Thing remains, viz. That every Couple should know what Communion they are of, and should be always, if possible, sincere without Constraint, of the same Communion with one another.

Sift I rather think 'tis left off, because it is not thought to be of so much Moment as they thought it of then.

Eld. Sift. That is then, because Religion itself is less in Fashion than it us'd to be, which indeed is too true; alfo Marriages are now wholly taken up with Mirth and gay Things: But in those Days Matrimony seems to have been understood, as it really is in itself, a solemn and serious Thing; not to be ventur'd on rashly, consider'd of flightly, or perform'd with Levity and Loofeness: 'tis a Transaction of the greatest Weight, attended with Circumflances of the greatest Importance, and Consequences of the utmost Concern to our Welfare or Misery: The Happiness of Life, the Prosperity of Families, and indeed the Interest of the Soul is exceedingly dependant upon the good or bad Conduct of both Parties in this great Affair; and to run headlong upon it, is rightly compar'd to a Horse rushing into the Battle, and argues a miserable Thoughtlefiness of what is before us.

Sift. Dear Sifter, you terrify me with talking thus:

What is it you would have me do?

IT

it |-

id th

1-

11-

at.

ut

n-

th

er.

ce

Eld. Soft. I would have you take some Measures, such as Opportunity will not fail (in your Conversation with this Gentleman) to present you with, that you may know

t

d

0

9

yo

it,

an

lig

an

Wa

ch

for

the

the

qua

dor Ge

to l

any

of I

not only negatively that he is no Hater and Despifer of God and Religion, but positively what his Principles in Religion are; you may go as far farther as you see Room for it, but less than this you can never be satisfied with; and can never answer it to God, to yourself, your Mother's dying Injunctions, nor to your Children, if you should have any, to venture upon marrying him without it.

Sift. If Mr ---- heard your Discourse, he would think

you were very much his Enemy.

Etd. Sift. If he was in his Senses, he would think me very much his Friend.

Sift. No, no, quite the contrary, I affure you.

eld. sift. Pray, my Dear, let me alk you one Question; for I must own to you this is one of my great Suspicions; has he enquired nothing after your Religion, the Protession you make, or the Opinion you are of? Has he ask'd you no Question about that neither?

Sist. No, not a Word, he knows better; he knows I should give him but a short Answer, if he should ask me any thing about my Religion: What do you think I'll be catechiz'd already? No, no; it is not come to that

neither.

Eld. Sift. This is one of the strongest Grounds of Sufpicion to me, and affures me that he has very little Regard to Religion in general; that he can pretend to marry you, and know nothing whether you are a Heathen or Christian; an Atheist or religious Person, a Papist or a Protestant; the Man can have no great Value for Religion, that is so little concerned whether his Wife has any, or no; for I take the Thing to weigh as much on one Side as on the other, where there is any serious Consideration at Bottom.

Sift. Indeed we have had no Discourse about it.

Eld. Sift. It seems you are pretty well agreed; that is to say, that neither of you trouble your Heads about it: I must confess, I think it will be a dreadful Match.

Sift. Why fo? I tell you I have a way to prevent all the

the Mischief you sear, and that is, as I told you before, I am resolved we will agree; for if he is not of my Opinion, I will be of his Opinion, and so we will never have any Strife.

Eld Sift. But suppose you cannot do this; for I take all that for loose Talk: For Example, suppose he should

be a Papist?

Sift. I won't so much as suppose such a Thing: I won-

der you can suggest it of him.

Eld. Sift. You feem to be very much in the Fashion of our City-Ladies, Sister; I am forry for it.

sift. What Fashion's that, Sister?

Eld. Sift. Why, of reserving their Choice of Principles, full they see what Principles their Husbands shall be of

Sift. And is it not a very obliging Custom, Sister, in young Ladies? I think the Gentlemen owe them a great

deal for so much Complaisance.

Eld. Sift. There seems to be something of Forecast in it, I confess, viz. That they may be in a Posture to take any Thing that offers; but there is nothing of serious Religion in it.

sift. Well, there is a great deal of good Humour in it; and it takes off the Occasions of religious Disputes afterward, which I take to be the worst Kind of Family-Breat

ches.

l

2

t

n

r

-

n

1=

IĘ

ıt

11

Eld Sift. But is not a Concurrence of Principles before-hand a much better Way, especially considering that the Enquiry is made during a State of Distance, and while there is Power of preventing the Mischiefs of being une-

qually roked?

sift. Well, I am persuaded there never was such a Thing done, except by my stiff formal Sister: Did ever a young Gentleman when he came to court his Mistress, examine her, to know her Principles, and ask her what Religion she was of? Or did ever young Lady, when she was courted by any Gentleman, set up to catechize him upon the Articles of his Creed, except, as I say, my surly Sister.

Eld. sift. Let me answer that Question with a Questi-

on, Sister: Did ever a young Lady, that had any Regard to Religion, and the further Happiness of her Life, suffer herself to be courted two Months by a strange Person coming out of Italy, from the very Bowels of Superstition, and the very Kingdom of Popery, and go on with him even to Drawing of Writings, and never know what Religion he was of, or whether he had any Religion, or no; except that she had heard by Accident that he was not an Atheist?

Sift. Well, I must take him for better and for worse, you

f

it

h

tu

th

G

of

th

fa

gi

et

fo

tif

of

lie

H

ma

in

and

the

rat hin

lici

Is

know; I'll make the best of him I can-

Eld. Sift. I am very forry that I can't prevail with you to prevent your own Misfortunes, when it is so easy to be done.

sift. You propose what I cannot so much as mention to him; I tell you it would be the rudest Thing; I'm sure if he should do so to me, I should spit in his Face. and bid him go and look for one that was religious enough for him; sure, never any such Thing was done in the World!

Eld. Sist. I wonder you can talk so, Sister! Do you not remember the Passages about Mr.-----when he courted my Cousin----? Did he not enter into a most serious pretty Discourse with her about Religion, when we were all at Table with them? And don't you remember we all said, ay and you too, sister, when you heard it, That he did it with so much Modesly, and so handsomely, that nothing could be more becoming? And did not you, as well as I, call her a thousand Fools for pretending to be disgusted at it.

sift. But the took ill his publick Manner of doing it,

which I think was wrong too.

Eld. Sist. But I find you don't know or don't remember the rest of the Story; she exposed herself to the last. Degreeby resenting it: The Case was this: The Gentleman had courted her some Weeks, and lik'd her, nay lov'd her very well; but was greatly perplex'd to find out what I aste of Religion his Mistress had; he was loth to fall point-blank upon her with the Question, just as you

fay, in your Case, yet he was not willing to be satisfied with a second-hand Relation neither; but one Day when we were all together at my Cousin's, the young Gentleman supped there, and after Supper her Mother and he and I entering into a Discourse together of several Matters, at last we began to talk of Religion, and particularly of religious Matches, when we were agreeably surprised to hear him talk for near half an Hour wholly upon that Subject; you were not there just when he talked of it, but we all gave you an Account of it.

Sift. I was not there; I supped at London that Night,

and came to you the next Day, I suppose.

1-

n

10

ou

ou

be

to

nd

ld!

ou

rt-

ous ere

all

he

no-

vell

dif-

it,

em-

last.

ien-

nay

h to

have heard him talk; he began with the Meaning and Nature of Religion, how it confifted chiefly in natural Duties, the Effects of the Knowledge and Acknowledgment of a God governing the World, to whom we owed the Homage of our Lives, and of all we enjoyed, and must account for the Use or Abuse of them: Then he observed how pleafant and agreeable a religious Life was, how it was Religion alone that made Life happy, Families pleasant, Society agreeable, and Relations comfortable; how miserably some Families were brought up for want of it; how beautiful it was to see an Unity between Relations in Matters of that Nature, and how dreadful the Strife was in Families where it was otherwise.

sift. Where was the all the while?

Eld. Sist. She sat just by him, and he held her by the Hand all the while: He went on then to tell us a great many pleasant Stories of Families that he had known: How in some the Husband was religious, and the Wise atheistic and prosane; and in others the Wise was religious, and the Husband rakish, loose and prosligate; and how miserable the one made the Life of the other. Then he gave himself a Loose to talk of the constant, never-sailing Felicity of Families where there was a Harmony in religious Things between Husband and Wise; and then to try her, I suppose, or perhaps to prevent her thinking he pointed

his Discourse at her, he turn'd to her, and smiling, My Dear, says he, if there be any Defect, on that Account between you and I, 'twill be on my Side; but I hope to be help'd forward by you.

f

li

11

gi

fil

T

ſh

no

of

án

ing

no

dif

ed

city

Co

of i

had

War

it, t

hav

was

Wha

thou

finif.

S

sift. That was a Kind of a Wheedle, rather than a serious Turn in his Talk; and I suppose she took it so.

Eld. sift. No, the took-it otherwife, I affure you; for he might easily see she was not pleased: However, he went on, and told us a long Story of a Couple that were married, and were both very religious, and yet, faid he, they never had any Happiness, any Agreement, or any practical Religion in the Family; this put me upon Enquiry into the Circumstances of it: Why Madam, says he, one was of one Opinion in Religion, and one was of another; both of them were tenacious of their own Opinion, and cenforious of the other: One went to one Place to wor ship, and one to another: One prayed to God in one Part of the House, and one in another. Why, fays I, they prayed to the same God, I hope; sure Charity might have taught them to have prayed together! So far from that, Madam, fays he, that they not only never prayed with one another, but I believe they scarce ever prayed for one another in their Lives, but looked upon one another as Heathens and Publicans, and such as God himself would not hear.

This was a fad Family, Sir, faid I; but I hope there are very few such in this Nation, where Religion is so heartily espoused. Truly, Madam, says he, it may teach us what Occasion there is for us to seek out for religious Wives, and to take Care to be agreeable Husbands to them, when we have them: And here he said a great many hand-some Things indeed of the little Concern Men generally took upon themselves either to marry religious Wives, or to see that the Opinions of those they married were not too much shocking with their own; and especially that when Men had religious Wives, or Women had religious Husbands, they did not study, as much as lay in them, on both Sides to bring their Opinions to agree with one another, bearing with one another, yielding as much as possi-

ble to one another, and the like; that, as the Scripture faid, their Prayers might not be hindred.

Sift. Well, and was this the Discourse that she did not

like?

le

7-

id

be

be

m

m,

er,

eir

li-

re

fo

ch

ous

m,

nd-

lly

or

Ton

hat

ous

on

no-

ffi-

Eld. Sift. I am sure her Mother and I liked it; but she behaved herself so simply about it the next Day, that gave him a Surfeit of her Religion, and he declined her afterwards upon that very Account; for as he told me since very seriously, she discovered such a Temper at that Time, such a general Dislike of a religious Life, and of a regular Family, that made him particularly afraid of her.

Sift Ay, ay, he should have gone, if he was so nice; I should have liked his Discourse no better than she did.

Eld. Sist How can you say so, Sister, when you cannot but remember how you did like it when you heard of it?

Sift. I should have thought it was too publick though, and that it was a Kind of forcing me to a Necessity of giving an Account of my Opinions, whether I would or no.

Eld. sift. Well, what you would have done I know not; but I think no Woman in her Senses could have disliked such Principles as he went upon; it plainly shewed her that he was a Man that placed the principal Felicity of his Life upon having a religious Wife, a religious Conversation in his Family, and a religious Government of it as it increased.

Sist. What was that to the Purpose? She would have had him without it, and he might have talked of it afterwards.

Eld Sift. Yes, yes, she would have had him without it, that was her Folly: But he was resolved he would not have her without it, and that was his Wisdom; and there was an absolute Necessity for him to try before-hand what he had to expect.

Sist. Well, I would not have been tried by him; he should e'en have gone, I say, and taken a Fool for his own

finishing, where he could have found her.

Eld. Sift. Well, and he did go; and you know he mar-

ried afterwards a very fensible, sober and religious Woman, and they are a very happy Family as any I know; whereas our foolish Cousin, you see has married a Rake; a Fellow of no Religion, and is as miserable almost as it is possible for a Woman that has a good Estate to be made in this World.

sist. Well, Sister, and how do you bring this Story down to my Case! I hope, I am not going to marry a Rake as she has done; if I thought it was so, I would soon clear

myself.

Eld. Sift. No, no, Sifter, I do not say so; but there are many Kinds of Husbands to make a sober Woman miferable, besides Rakes, that I assure you; nor was it up on that Account I told you the Story.

Sift. What about differing in Opinions you mean? I must confess, I think, Sister, you are too nice in that Case, and run it up, I say, too high: I can give many In-

stances where such Matches do very well-

Eld. Sist. Pretty well, you should have said; and I know where you are a-going to name a Family; I suppose you mean our Cousin Martha ----, and our Friend James ----; one a strict Church-woman, and the other a Quaker.

Sift. Well, suppose I did mean those; they live very

comfortably, and love one another very well.

Eld Sift. I am glad you have named them, because I would argue from the best Example you can give: I allow they live as well as 'tis possible for two of so wide and irreconcileable Principles to do, and it is owing to a World of Good-humour, Affection and Charity in both of them; but if you think there is not something wanting between them, which ought to be between a Man and his Wise, something essential to what we call Happiness, something they would give half their Estate to have, and the Want of which robs them of the sweetest Part of Relation, and of the best and most solid Comfort of a married Life; or if you think that they are not both sensible of it, you are greatly mistaken.

1

Sift. I do not converse much with them, not I; but I know they are a very loving Couple, and every body takes

Notice of it, and admires them for it.

Eld Sift. Before I go on where I was speaking, let me take Notice to you, that your very last Words now are an Argument on my Side: It is true, they are admired for their kind and pleasant Way of Living one with another; and why is it! but because it is so seldom, so rare, so wonderful indeed, to find two of different Opinions agree so well, that all People wonder at these two: And shall any young Woman, that values her Peace, and lays any Stress upon the Happiness of an Agreement with her Husband, venture upon such a Circumstance, in which it must needs be next to a Miracle, if she has any such Happiness.

Sift. You don't know but there may be many more

fuch.

It

n

as

ar

11-

I

at

n-

I

ip-

nd

ner

ery

e I

al-

and

orld

em;

een

ife,

ing

ant

and

or

are

Eld. Sift. Well, but I'll keep to your own Example, and I will convince you, Sifter, that, even in these two, who are happy to a Miracle, yet there is an Exception to their Felicity; and, though they love intirely, and that Love covers a Multitude of Things, yet, I fay, they find something wanting, which other People have, and fomething that they would be glad to have; and I have had frequent Occasions, in serious Discourse with her, to hear her speak her Mind freely to me, in this very Case; particularly I will give you one Example of it, viz. One Sunday Morning, when I went to Church with her, O! faid the to me, Cousin, if I could but get this dear Jemmy of mine to go to Church with me! Well, says I, what then? What then! fays she; why, then I should be the happiest Woman upon Earth: Methinks, 'tis the melancholiest Thing continued she, to go alone to the Worship of God, and the Man that I love, and is to me as my own Soul, won't worship with me; and it breaks my Heart; it quite takes away all the Comfort of my Life. A while after this, as we walked along the Street to go to Church, she fetched a deep Sigh: What's the Matter with you, said I, Coufin? The Matter, Coulin! Jays she, Look there, you'll see what's

what's the Matter: There's Mrs. -----, with her Huf-band and all her Children going Hand in Hand to serve God together: They live a heavenly Life; while we, tho' we love one another better than they do a great deal, yet live like two Strangers on the Sabbath-day, whatever we do all the rest of the Week. Now, What think you of all their apparent Affection to one another, Sister? Will that make up the Loss?

Sift. They live very comfortably, for all that; and their Love makes up all those Intervals in their Satis-

faction.

Eld. Sift. Well, I'll tell you how comfortably they live; I affure you, tho' they are Patterns to the whole World, for extraordinary Affection, and their Love is so uninterrupted, that it does make up Abundance of other Things, ver here, I fay, it makes up no Intervals, I can affure you of it; nay, I think verily, that Affection, which it is confes'd they have one for another, and for which they are both so admired, makes it the worse; at least, it makes it the more grievous to bear; and the Part I am telling you will prove it; pray let me go on with it: I came back with her and dined; and after Dinner, honest Fames takes up his Gloves and his Cane, and came and kifs'd her, and prepares to go to the Quaker's Meeting. She could hold no longer then, but burst out into Tears; he was extremely anxious to know what ailed her, but the could not speak; she was unwilling to grieve him, and unwilling to say any Thing that was unkind; he pres'd her a long Time, and faid a thousand tender kind Things, that I hardly expected from him; but that made her cry the more. At last, I said to him smiling, I know what troubles her, but you won't relieve her: Won't 1, faid he, a little moved, Why dost thou say so; I would let out my Blood to do her any Good; and she knows that I will flick at nothing to do for her. Why, fays I, you won't ferve God with her. Won't I, faid he, yes I would with all my Heart, if she would let me. This I found laid a Foundation for some Dispute about their Principles, but

the wisely avoided that, and I perceived it, so I put it off: I dare say, says I, she would give all she has in the World you would but go to Church with her now. At that she burst out, though full of Tears. Ay, says she, I would give him back my Jointure with all my Heart. He took her in his Arms, and with all the tenderest and kindest Expressions that he was capable of, endeavoured to pacify her, and put an End to it, as a Thing they could not dispute of without Unkindness, and therefore better to be avoided: But, it took up the whole Afternoon to restore them one to another, and she neither went to the Church, nor he to the Meeting, and yet here was nothing but Kindness and Affection between them all this while.

Sift. I never heard any Thing of this before.

eld. Sist. But I have heard a great deal more from her, and from him too; though she loves him to an Extremity, and to give him his Due, he merits all her Affection, yet as she is a very sober religious Woman, she is ready to break her Heart to think sometimes what a Life she lives, she can scarce ever talk to me of any Thing else, I having been something more intimate with her on these Occasions than ordinary.

Sift. What has she to complain of? Has she not a kind Husband? And does he not give her all the Liberty and Freedom in the World? Does she not go as fine, and dress as well as she pleases? Does he not keep her a Coach, and give her Leave to give her own Liveries, and go where, and do what she will? Does she not live like a Queen?

What can she complain of?

e

a

1

Eld. Sift. Her Case, in a Word, Sister, is the very Case our dear Mother warn'd us of; and it is not hard to tell you what she has to complain of; she is a very sober religious Woman, that serves God Night and Day, with a Sincerity and Devotion not easy to be found among Women, as the World goes now, and I'll tell you what grieves her, and what she complains of: Her Husband is as religious too in his Way as she is in hers; but as there is no Harmony or Concurrence in their several Principles and

M 2

Ways of Worship, so there can be no publick stated Family-worship: He does not join with her, nor she cannot join with him; fo all the Thing called Family-Religion the Glory of a married State, and the Comfort of Family Society, is entirely lost; the Servants are left ungoverned, the Children unguided; and there again is her Grief doubled, she has four little Children. It is true, he is a Man of too good a Humour to deny or restrain her in the Education of her Children; but it is a fad Thing to her to be obliged to instruct and caution her Children against the Practice of their Father, whose Life ought to be their Pattern, and his Practice their Example. O Sister! if ever you come to look into such a Condition with a feeling Sense of it, as your own, you will find it is not all the Tenderness of the most affectionate Husband in the World can make up the Loss of these Things: On the other Hand, he has his Dissatisfaction too; he is as sad on the Account of her Difference from him, as the is for his Difference from her; so that in short the unhappiness is mutual.

Sift. They should have considered and prevented these

Things before-hand.

Eld. Sift. That's true, Sister; and that's the Reason of all my Discourse to you; that's my Proposal to you, and the Reason why I press you so much to come to a Certainty in these Things: You will have sad Researcher when 'tis past Remedy.

Sift. I am not so nice in the Point; I told you my Remedy for it; if he can't come up to me, I can come up to

him: I am fure he is no Quaker.

Eld. Sift. I hear you, Sifter; you make light of it now:
I believe he is no Quaker, but he may be worfe; and you are not fure he will equal that Quaker in Goodness of Humour, Kindness and Affection, the want of which, I must tell you, will make the want of the other be so much the worse to bear.

Sigt. Well, I must run the Venture of it, I think; 'tis

gone too far to break off now.

Eld. Sist I have not been persuading you to break it off, Sister, you mistake me; I am only arguing, or rather persuading you to inform yourself of Things, and know before-hand what you are going to do, that you may not run into Misery blindfold, and make your Marriage be, as old Hobbes said of his Death, A Leap in the Dark.

Sift. I think all Marriages is a Leap in the Dark in one

Respect or another.

Eld. Sift. Well, Sister, if it be so, it should not be so in Matters of Religion, in whatever other Case it is so; that should be clear, whatever is doubtful; that should be examined into, and perfectly discovered, whatever is omitted; the Mistakes in this are fatal to both Sides, and often irretrievable, and the Consequences dismal.

Sift. It is all a Hazard, and that amongst the rest.

you and I have often argued it when you feemed to be of my Mind. It is true, there is a Hazard in every Part of the Change of Life; we risque our Peace, our Affection, our Liberty, our Fortunes, but we ought never to risque our Religion.

Sift. Why, I am not running the Risque of my own Re-

ligion, though I do not know his-

Eld. Sist. Yes, truly, in some Measure, Sister, you do, and your own Words acknowledg'd it just now: Did you not say, that if he would not be of your Opinion, you would be of his? And is it not often that we see young Women change their Opinions, nay, change the very Principles of their Religion, in Compliance with their Husbands?

Sift. Well, and is it not very well to do fo?

Eld. Sift. If their Principles were ill founded before, they do well to change them, to be sure; but is it not oftener that they rather abandon Principle than exchange it, lose their Religion than increase it? For you cannot suggest, that all the Women who have changed their Opinions, in Compliance with their Husbands, were wrong before, and have changed for the better.

M 3

Sift.

Sift. It is better fo far, that it takes away the Founda-

tion of Family-Breaches, which you speak of.

Eld. Sift. But it is a fad Exchange if it be wrong; for the Woman then exchanges the Peace of her Conscience for Peace with her Husband; loses her Religion, and gives up her Principles instead of exchanging them for better.

Sist. There may be some Compliance sure, without entirely abandoning Principle; you propose no Medium be-

tween Right and Wrong.

Eld. Sift. Why, take our Cousin we were speaking of, or her Husband the Quaker, let them stand for the Example: Suppose she in Compliance with him, for you know she has Affection enough to do any possible Thing to oblige him, should turn Quaker, would she not retain a Sting in her Soul, that would destroy all her inward Peace?

sift. I don't know what to fay to that; Quakers are

Christians, 1 hope.

Eld Sist. I won't enter into that; I'll allow them to be Christians too; but take it of him as well as of her: Suppose him to change then, and come over to her, then it would be the same in him; which is all one to the Case in Hand. Pray, where is the Felicity of such a Match, where one or other is supposed to act without Conscience or against Conscience all their Days for conjugal Peace, and to sacrifice Principle to Assection? Are not these still invincible Arguments for what I am persuading to?

Sift. I scarce know what you are persuading to, not I.

Eld. Sist. Yes you do, Sister, very well; however I'll repeat it as often as you say so: I am urging the Necessity of young People comparing their religious Principles and Opinions before Marriage; and seeing that they agree, at least so far as to lay no Foundation of a religious Breach in the Family after Marriage; that they may worthip God together, join in Family-Precepts, and support Family-Religion; that they may agree in their Instructions to their Children, and join in setting them Examples;

that there may be no Disputings or Dividings against one another, but a mutual Harmony in the propagating their own eternal Interests, and that they may go Hand in Hand the true Way to Heaven.

Sist. And cannot this happen to them without a Settlement of Circumstances before-hand, that we must capitulate about Religion, as we do about Jointures, and settle

Principles we do Fortunes, always before-hand.

Eld. Sift. That it may not or cannot happen so, I will not say; but if you will take the World at large, as it is now stated, between those that have no Religion at all, and those who differ from others, you must allow, Sister, it is a Lottery of a thousand Blanks to one Prize; and who that values their own Peace would venture the Odds?

sift. I believe I shall venture for all that.

Eld. Sift. Then either you have no Principle now, Sifter, or it is ten to one but you give it up when you are married.

Sift. Perhaps you may be mistaken in both.

Eld. Sift. If I am, there is a third, which I was going to add, but restrained it in respect to you, in which I believe I shall not be mistaken.

Sift. Let us have it, however.

Eld. Sift. If you will have it then, it is this: That (to repeat the former) either, as I faid, you have no Principle now, or will give up your Principles when you are married, or will be very miserable in a continual Family-Strife to maintain them.

Sift. It must all be ventured, Sister; I see no Remedy now; there's no going back at this Time of Day.

After this Discourse, the eldest Sister, seeing her resolute, gave it over, and the young Lady was as good as her Word; for she put it all to the Venture, as will appear in the following Dialogue.

The End of the First Dialogue.

DIALOGUE II.

I HE young Lady mentioned in the foregoing Dialogue is now to be viewed in another Station of Life: She was not altogether so thoughtless of her Circumstance, or so unconcerned as she seemed to be by her Discourse to her Sister, about what was before her, but she had not the Conduct or Resolution of her Sisters to carry her thro'; however, she did take one Step sufficient to leave a sad Example of a Father perfectly unconcern'd about the religious Settlement of his Children, and making the Good of their Souls no Part of his Care.

It was but a few Days after the Discourse which she had held with her Sister, that her Father and she had the following Dialogue one Evening, after the Gentleman, who courted her was gone away; her Father being in a Parlour all alone, called her to him, and began with her

thus:

Fa. Well, Child, I suppose your Ceremonies begin to be pretty well over now; when are we to bring this Business to a Conclusion?

La. I am in no Hafte, Sir.

Fa. Well, but Mr.---- is in Haste; you may be sure he would be willing to have the Inconveniences of coming and going thus late be over; and as long as both Sides are satisfied, why should we keep him in Suspence?

Da. I do not keep him in Suspence, Sir.

Fa. Weil then, if you are agreed, let us put an End to it, my Dear, and tell me what Day you will be married, and I'll make the Appointment.

Da. Agreed, Sir! I have agreed to nothing, it is all

between him and you.

Fa. How do you mean, Child? He has now waited on you these fix or seven Weeks; I hope you know one another's Minds before now.

Da. We have spent six or seven Weeks indeed in his Visits, talking and rattling of Things in general, but I am

not much the wifer for ic.

Fa. Why, you are a little better acquainted, I hope, than you were at first, Child: Do you like the Gentleman, or have you any I hing to object?

Da. Sir, I don't trouble myself much with Objections; I leave it all to you, Sir: I resolve to do as you will have

me to do: I won't do as my Sister did.

Fa. Well, you are in the right there; but I hope there is no Occasion neither: This Gentleman is a Man of Sobriety, and of a good Character.

Da I hope, Sir, you have inform'd yourself fully of that; for I leave it all to you, Sir; and about his Religion

too.

Fa. I have known him a great many Years, Child; he is a very honest good fort of a Gentleman, I affare you.

Da. I hope you have good Grounds to be fatisfied, Sir; for I depend upon you, Sir, for every Thing: I know you would not propose him to me, if he was not a very sober good Man.

Fa. I am thoroughly fatisfied of that my Dear.

Da. And of his being a religious Person, Sir? You know what my Mother obliged us to on her Death-bed: I hope, Sir, you have a good Account of his being a sober religious Man? I leave all to you, Sir.

Fa. Yes, yes, my Dear, he is a very religious good

Man, for aught I know, I affure you.

Da. He is a Protestant, Sir, is he not?

Fa. A Protestant, Child! Yes, yes, he was always a Protestant all the while I traded with him; I have had an Account of it from several People. A Protestant! yes, yes, you may be sure he is a Protestant; I dare say he is.

Da. Well, Sir, if you are fatisfied, I have no more to fay. Fa. Nay, Child, why doft thou put it so all upon me?

I believe he is a good Man, and religious enough; I didn't bring him up, nor I han't ask'd him how religious he is; I do not enter into these Things with Folks; every one's Religion is to himself.

Da Well, Sir, if you are fatisfied, I must be satisfied,

to be fure.

Fa. Nay*, I would have you be fatisfied too, Child; can't you ask him what Religion he is of?

Da. I can't ask him such a Question, not I; besides,

Sir, if you are fatisfied, I shall look no farther.

Fa. I know not what Occasion there is to be so scrupulous; you see what ridiculous Work your Sister made of it, and yet married the same Man two Years after.

Da. Sir, I don't make any Scruples, not I, if you are fatisfied; I shall do as you would have me; I don't + suppose you would have me have him, if he wan't a very sober Man.

Fa. I tell thee, Child, I dare say he is a very sober good Man, and will make a very kind Husband; I can say no more to thee.

Da. All I desire to know is, that he is a Protestant; I

hope your are fure of that, Sir.

Fa. Dear Child, what makes thee talk fo?

Da. He has lived a long while in Italy, Sir, where,

they fay, they are all Papilts.

Fa. Why, so did I, Child, when I was a young Man, but never turned Papist; I dare say Mr----- is a Protestant; I never heard any one suspect him before.

It may be feen by this dull and empty Discourse on both Sides, that this poor young Lady went on tanquam boves, like the Ox to the Slaughter, not knowing, or not considering, that it was for her Life; she resolved all her

Scruples

^{*} Here the Father seemed a little unwilling to have it all lie up-

⁺ She has nothing in her but the fame dull Story of doing every Thing her Father would have her do.

Scruples into that weak Way of answering, I leave it all to you, Sir; I hope you are satisfied, Sir, and I'll do as you would have me, Sir; and the like: Not confidering that she had a Father that laid no Stress upon any Thing but the Money; his whole Care was for the Settlement, and the Estate, not enquiring into the Principles of the Person; and therefore his Answers are as filly for a Father, as her's were for a Wife, viz. That he dare fay the Gentleman was a very fober good Man, that he had known him a long Time, and did not question but he was a Protestant, and the like. In a Word, the Girl left it all to her Father; and the Father, perfectly indifferent as to Matters of Religion, left it out of his Enquiry. And thus they were married in a few Weeks after, and abundance of Mirth and Jollity they had; which covered all the Appearances of other Things for a great While.

At length, the Lady went Home to her House in the City, which was magnificently furnished: Among other rich Furniture, the Rooms were exceedingly stored with a noble Collection of very fine Paintings, done by the best Masters in Italy; the Part of Italy where this Gentleman had liv'd, viz. the Duke of Tuscany's Country, being particularly eminent for choice Pictures. It happen'd after she had been some Time at Home, had settled her House, and had sinished the Decorations of her Rooms, that her Husband bringing some very fine Pictures Home, which were newly arriv'd from Italy, has, among others, three very choice Pieces hung up in their Bed-chamber; where-of one being a Picture of the Crucifixion, extremely valuable and fine, he contriv'd to have hang'd up by the Bed-

fide.

r

y

Į

n

His Wife, not used to such Things, perfectly ignorant of the Design, not at all acquainted with the Use made of them in Popish Countries, took no manner of Notice of it at first, taking it to be only brought in there, as it was a most noble Piece of Painting; and that her Husband thought it was the best Thing he could grace her Chamber with. It happen'd her two Sisters came together some Time

Time after, as is usual, to see her House, and to see the fine Collection of Paintings, which they had been told so much of: And after some Time, their Sister and their new Brother led them through all the Apartments, which were indeed extremely sine: The Brother-in-law, as what he took great Delight in, made it his Business to tell them the Design of the several Pictures, what Places or sine Houses such and such represented, what Stories and what Faces others were drawn for, and the like; and being his Wife's Sisters, he treated them with all the Freedom and Kindness imaginable.

When they came to the Crucifixion, which hung by the Bed-fide, he told them, there was one of the finest Pieces of Painting in England; told them the Name of the Painter that had drawn it, who, he said, was one of the best Masters in Italy; and I'll affure you, Sister, says he, this

is counted a fine Thing in Italy.

But why must it hang in your Bed-chamber, Brother? fays the other married Sister, not suspecting any Thing; for her eldest Sister had not told her any Thing of what the had faid to her Sifter. O Madam, fays he, they always have these Things in their Bed-chambers in Italy on a religious Account. Well, fays the Sifter, but as we do not make use of them that Way, methinks they are better any where elfe, Why Sifter, fays he, our Bed-chambers are Places where we are, or ought to be most serious. Why, fays she again, but we that are Protestants do not make a religious Use of them. Not so much perhaps, says he, as the Romans do; but I cannot say but they may be useful to affist Devotion, Not at all, says the Sister. At least, Madam, fays he, they can be no Disadvantage to us; we want all possible Helps in our Adorations. We have the Promise of the Spirit of God to affist us, says the Sister, very warmly, and need no idolatrous Pictures. she was tart, and seem'd to be forward to dispute, which he avoided; so he called them to look on another Picture, and that pass'd off the Discourse.

After they had gone, thro' feveral Apartments, and had admired

h

i

1

a

it

IS

d

e

1-

is

at

ys

e-

ot

ny

re

y,

: a

28

ful

ıt,

We

he

er,

W

ch

e,

d

admired the fine Paintings, as indeed they well deferved, they came to his Closet; he would have avoided going in, and told them it was in Confusion, and not worth their feeing; but his Wife having told them it was her Husband's Closet, they would not be denied: When they went in, they were surpriz'd with the most charming Pictures that their Eyes had ever beheld, with Abundance of Rarities, which their Brother, being very curious, had pick'd up in his Travels; and in a little Room on one Side of his Closet, upon a Table cover'd with a Carpet of the finest. Work they had ever feen, flood a Pix or Repository of the Holt, all of Gold, and above them an Altar-Piece of most exquisite Painting: He was indeed jealous of being betray'd by these Things, but there being none but the Ladies, who had never feen fuch Things before, and knew nothing by the Form, they retired without fo much as discovering what it was; and as for his Wife, she was fo perfectly ignorant, that the was easily imposed upon.

They pass'd from this Place to the other Side of the Closet, where were Abundance of very fine Pieces; but here the eldest Sister could not forbear observing that all the Pictures on that whole Side of the Room were religious Pieces, and, tho' still without much Suspicion, she said to him, I observe, Brother, you Gentlemen that have liv'd in Italy are so in Love with Popish Customs, that you are always full of these Church-Paintings; here's nothing but Representations of Christ and the Virgin Mary, in one Shape or another, in every Room in your House: She went on jestingly for some Time, till she came to the upper End of the Room, to a Picture which hung just over an easy Chair, and which had a Curtain drawn over it; he thought the would not have let her Curiofity out-run her Good-manners, and so did not apprehend her opening it; but she made no Scruple of offering to sling back the Curtain; but foon found it would not run back, being, as the found afterwards, to draw up in Festoons with Pullies: However, the discover'd by what the had done,

that the Picture was the same with that in the Bed-chamber, viz A large Crucifix, or Picture of the Crucifixion.

She faid no more, but hasten'd to view what was farther to be feen, yet fo as that it was eafily to discover the was in no little Disorder. Her Sister that came with her discover'd it first, and ask'd what ail'd her? Then the new-married Sifter, whose House she was in, came to her with the same Question; she own'd to them she was not very well, and that prefently gave her an Excuse to withdraw into the Woman's Apartment, where she had some Room to recollect herfelf: However, the took Care not to give the least Cause to suspect what ail'd her. till the got an Opportunity, when no Body was in the Room with her but her youngest Sister, (she who was first married) and then she burst out into Tears, and taking her Sister about the Neck, with the greatest Passion imaginable; O my dear Sifter, fays she, this poor Child is utterly undone. Undone! fays her Sister, what do you mean? I think she is nobly married: O Sister? I tell you she is undone; the Man's a Papist! Somebody came into the Room just as she had said this, so that her Sister had no Time to ask her any farther; and she, to prevent it, added, I'll tell you more by and by; fo they pass'd it over.

You may be sure it was, after this, a very uneasy Hour the two Sisters spent in the Ceremonies of their Visit, both longing earnestly to be at Liberty to talk together, one to disburden her Mind, which was oppress'd with what she had formerly suspected, and now found consirmed; and the other to hear the Particulars of what she was so surprized at.

It was not long before they got away, and as foon as ever they were in the Coach, the married Sister said, Dear Sister, you have so surprized me with what you told me just now, that I thought every Minute an Hour till I got away, that I might talk about it; I intreat you what makes

you talk as you do?

Eld.

b

F

Eld. Sift. O Sifter! I am too well fatisfy'd of it; I am fure 'tis fo: I suspected it all along before they were marry'd, but now I am convinced of it: I am as sure of it as if I had seen him at High Mass *.

Marry'd Sift. Now you surprize me again; you say

you suspected it all along.

Eld. Sift Indeed I did; tho' I own I know no Reason

why I did fo.

Mar. Sist. But why did you not warn her of it? she ought to have known of it; certainly she would never have marry'd him if she had known it: That was very unkind, not to warn her of it.

Eld. Sift. I did very plainly tell her my Suspicions; but as I had no Ground to fasten it upon him, it made very little Impression upon her, nor could I really say it

was fo.

e

S

n

d

0

11

ie

er

nt

it

ur lit,

er,

th

m-

he

as id,

me

akes Mar. Sift. Well I would have prest her to a solemn Enquiry into it; you might have prevented her Ruin, if you had done it in Time; now she is undone indeed, if it be as you say, and there is no Room to prevent it.

Eld. Sift. You cannot think I had so little Concern for her, as not to tell her my Suspicions and to use all the Arguments I was capable of, to persuade and prevail with her to enquire into his Principles; for I know too well what the dwelling twenty Years in Italy might do. †

Mar. Sift. Poor Child! she is ruin'd indeed; she has leap'd headlong into it, in spight of good Advice, and her Ruin is of her own procuring: But what will you do

now, Sifter? will you let her know it?

Eld. Sift. No no; I won't be the Messenger of her Sorrows, she'll find it out soon enough; the Thing will discover itself too soon.

Mar. Sift. Dear Sister, what does my Father say to it? Does he know it?

Eld.

^{*} Here she tells her what she had observed upon his Pictures and Crucifixes.

[†] Here she recites to her the Particulars of the whole Dialogue foregoing, between her and her younger Sister.

Eld. Sift. You know, Sifter, my Juther gives himself very little Trouble about such Things: I dare say he never enquir'd into it, or concern'd but less about it.

Mar. Sift. Does he know any Thing of it now?

Eld. Sift. Truly, I do not know; but I know that after I had press'd her so earnestly about it she did mention it to my Father once at a Dillance in their Discourse, as that she did not question but he was a good sober Man. or elfe he (her Father) would not have recommended him: and added, I hope he is a Protestant, Sir?

Mar. Sift. Well, what faid my Father to that Part?

Eld. Sift. He answered after the same slight Way as those who make the main Part none of their Care: Yes, yes, Child, a Protestant! I dare say he is; he was always 'a Protestant when I was in Italy with him, and every Body knows he is a Protestant; and you need not question that, I dare fav.

Mar. Sift. Poor Child! she had no sincere Concern up? on her about it; if the had, the would not have been put off in a Matter of so much Moment, with a bare Supposition, taking it for granted; or I dare fay, tis fo, without

enquiring into it.

Eld. Sift. It is too true; she has not made it much her Concern, and I am so much the more afraid for her now.

Mar. Sift. Afraid for her, fay you, what are you afraid

of her turning Papilt?

Eld. Sift:-Why, yes, I am: You know I rold you what an'Answer she gave me to that very Point several Times, viz. That if he would not be of her Opinion, the would be of his; that if he was a Christian Catholick, she was a Catholick Christian, and they would have no Strife about that, and the like; and yet that is not all my Concern neither.

Mar. Sift. What is it then?

Eld. Sift. Why I fear more the Infinuations and Subtility of his Tongue, his unwearied Sollicitation, the powerful Motives of a Man pertectly Muster of the Art of Persuafion;

sion; and that the more S Tetness he has in his Temper's (for he is really of a most engaging Disposition) the more Influence his Words will have on her, to win her over to Error, not merely in Complaisance to him as her Husband, but by her not being able to answer his Reasonings.

Mar. sift. I confess, 'tis hard to resist the Force of those Persuasions, the Reasons for which, we cannot rid our Hands of by Argument: And one is apt to think one ought to comply with what we cannot confute; otherwise the Papists will tell us, we are Protestants, we know not why; a Jew may tell us we are Christians, we know not why; and an Atheist may tell us, we are religious we know not why, and so on.

it

as

Ď,

n:

as es,

ys

0-

on

ip-

ut

ofi-

out

ich

ner

aid

hat

ies,

uld

is a

out'

ern

ilty

ful uaEld. Sijt. And that which is worse, there is no breaking the Thing to her; to talk to her of it, is to anticipate her Missortunes: Perhaps he designs to conceal it from her for good and all, and at least it may be a great while before she discovers it; and all that Time she will be happy in not thinking herself so miserable as she is.

Mar. Sift: I allow you, it is not fit to mention it to her first; and yet I am atraid if she finds it out, she will endeavour to conceal it from us.

Eld. Sist. I doubt so; and by that Means we are perfectly deprived of all Opportunity of affishing her, or endeavouring to fortify her against the Infinuations of any to turn her to Popery.

Mar. Sift. But I think we should break it to my Fa-

Eld. Sist. I know not what to say to that: I am afraid his Indifference in the Thing should be a Means to discover it to her, and bring some Inconvenience or other with it.

Mar. Sist. I do not see any Danger of that: But I think its fit he should know it on many Accounts.

Eld. Sift. I acknowledge I think he should know it, if it were possible to engage him not to disclose it; but, un-

lef

less it can be done so, I would not have any Hand in tellang it him, upon any Account whatever.

While they were in this Dilemma, and doubtful what to do in it, as to telling their Father, they were delivered from it, by their Father himself, as will appear in the following Discourse. As soon as they came Home, their Father began with them: for he was more impatient to open his Mind to them, than they were on the other Hand doubtful about consulting with him upon this unhappy Case: Both Sides being therefore willing to talk of it, they could not want an Opportunity; and the Father, after Supper, began it with his new-marry'd Daughter thus:

Fa. Well, Betty, you have been to visit your Sister in her new House, I find: How do you like Things?

Mar. Sift. Sir, she is nobly marry'd, to be fure, she has

a House like a Palace.

1 faw in my Life: He has laid out wast Sums sure in Pictures.

Fa. He always had the finest Collection of Paintings of any Merchant in Leghern: He is a great Lover of Art, and has a nice Judgment, which are the two only Things that can make buying so many Pictures rational; for his Pieces are so well chosen, that he may sell them when he pleases for above a thousand Pounds more than they cost.

Eld. sift. I like his Fancy to Pictures very well; but methinks I don't admire his having fo many Crucifixes and

Church Pieces among them.

Fa. It is the Cultom in Italy, Child; all People have

them.

Eld. Sist. That is, because they make a religious use of them: But I think Protestants should not be so fond of them, who make no such Use of them; It looks so like Popery, that if the Mind was not surnish'd against them, it seems to give a Life that Way; and then I observe he hangs them all just as they do; his Crucifixes and Passion-Pictures

Pictures hang all by the Bed-side; his Altar-Pieces just at the upper End of the Room, or on the East Side; I cannot imagine why Protestants, if they will have the Pictures, should hang them in the same Places, and mimick the Catholicks in the Appearances, as long as they do not make the same Use of them.

This Discourse touch'd their Father to the Heart, and, as he said afterwards, he could hardly forbear Tears; but he held it in a little longe and reply'd, that it was only the Custom of the Country, and they might think no Harm in it; and so being willing to put by the Discourse, he turns again to his marry'd Daughter thus;

Fa. Well, but, Child, how do you like your new Brother? for you never law him before, or at least, never to converse with him.

Mar. Sift. He is a very fine Gentleman, Sir; I was going to wish you Joy. Sir, and to say I was very glad to see my Sister so well marry'd, but something prevented me. *

Fa I know not what prevented you, but I believe it was the same that forces me tell you both I have no Joy in it at all; your Sister is undone.

Mar. Sift. Undone, Sir! what do you mean? What can

be the Matter?

of

75

in

23

er

in

Igs

rt,

gs

his

he

oft.

but

and

ave

e of of like

em,

he

on-

Fa. She is undone indeed, Child; and more than that, I have undone her: the Man's a Papill. +

Mar. Sift. Are you fure of it, Sir ?

Fa. Ay, ay, I am too fure of it; I have liv'd in Italy, and know fomething of the Manner of fuch Things; I presently discover'd it.

Eld. Sift. Will you please to tell us how you discover-

Now the Father could contain himfelf no longer.

The Father burst out into Tears as soon as he had spoken the Words, and the Daughters stood as they were speechless for some Time, looking at one another; at last the married Daughter spoke.

led it? for we have the same Thoughts, but we durst not speak our Minds about it.

Fa. Child, it is impossible for any one that has liv'd in

Italy not to discover it, as soon as he sees his House.

Eld Sift. What from the Crucifixes and Church-Pictures I spoke of?

Fa. No, no, Child: But was you in his Closet?

Eld. Sift. Yes, Sir.

Fa. And was you in an inner Room that you went to through his Closet, and through another Room beyond it.

Eld. Sift. Yes, Sir; we were both there, but we faw nothing more than ordinary, only still more Church-Pieces, as that of the Passion, the Salutation, the Ascension, and the like.

Fa. It is because you have not been us'd to such Things, Child; why it is his Oratory; it is a little consecrated Chapel, and there stands an Altar and an Altar-piece over it, with a Crucifix, and the Ascension painted above that; on either Side there are sine rich Paintings, one of the Baptism, and another of the Assembly at the Feast of Pentecost, and the Holy Ghost descending in slaming Tongues, and the like. But that is not all, for upon the Altar is a Pix of pure Gold, cover'd with a Piece of Crimson Velvet, which is the Repository, as they call it, of the Host.

Eld. sift. I wonder, Sir, he would let you fee thefe

Things, if he defigned to conceal his Profession.

Fa. It was all by Accident; for when I was in his Clofet, he was called hastily down, and his Wife let me into these two Rooms: But alas! she knows nothing of the Meaning of them, she only takes them to be fine Italian Rarities.

Etd. sift. Indeed I do not wonder at that, for I understood them no more than she does: And yet, my Sister knows, I presently entertained the same Opinion of his Religion as you do now, but it was from a Picture of the Crucifixion that hung by his Bed-side with a Curtain over it.

Fa. Well, Child, yours are Suspicions, mine is a Certainty: When I charged him with it, he could not deny it, but seemed surprized when he found I had been in

his Chapel.

۵

0

W

e-

D,

ed

0-

VC

of

of

ng

he

m-

he

efe

10-

nto

the

ian

un-

ter his

the

0-

Mar. Sift. Nay, it is then out of Doubt, it feems, if he owns it; but what will become of my Sifter? Now she will have Reason to see how just my Mother's Injunctions were to us all; I fear she will reproach herself with the Neglect of them-

Fa My Dear, she must reproach me with it; 'tis I

have ruined her: I have given her up.

Mar. Sift. No, Sir, I think it lay upon her to have inquired into his Principles in Religion, before the had given herfelf out of her own Power.

Fa. My Dear, she came to me, and questioned with me upon this very Point: She ask'd me, if he was a Protestant, and I encouraged her, told her he was a Protestant, and a very sober good Man.

Mar. sift. I suppose, Sir, you did not say positively, that you were sure he was a Protestant, but that you believ-

ed fo.

Fa. I affured her so much of its being my Opinion, that I told her she need not fear it; and she again left it all to me, and depended upon me; and it is I that have betrayed and deluded her: In short, I have sold my Child, and the Peace of her Life, for the Toys and sine Things of Italy: I have undone her, it is all owing to my being unconcerned for the better Part.

Eld. Sift. Dear Father, do not take the Weight of it so much upon yourself: My Sister knows it was her Duty to have made a farther Search into it, and I prest her to

it in Time, and with all possible Importunity.

Fa. Child you did right; and I believe the defigned to follow your Directions; but what Affistance did I give her? How did I damp that Resolution, when I stopped her Mouth, by telling her, that I dar'd to say he was a Protestant? She trusted to my Assurance, nay, she told me that she did so.

N 3

Eld.

* Eld. Si/l. But, Sir, notwithstanding all this Discourse (for she told me every Word from Time to Time) I urged her a great many Times, and told her my Thoughts; for I suspected him from the beginning, and I laboured to convince her, that she ought to see with her own Eyes, and to talk plainly and openly to him of it.

Fa. Did she not tell you that her Father had affured

her he was Protestant, and that the trusted to that?

Eld. sist. She was more just to you, Sir, than to say that you assured her of it: but she repeated your very Words, that you said, you believed it, and date say he was; and I told her plainly, that it was evident from your Words, that you only spoke your Opinion, and that she ought not therefore to call that a positive Assurance to be depended upon: Indeed, Sir, I was very plain with her; she has no body to blame but herself, I told her. t

Fa. She has herfelf indeed been to blame for want of Reflexion upon your feafonable Persuasions, my Dear, and you acted a faithful Part to her: But had I been as faithful to her, who was obliged in Duty to have done it, and on whom she depended, as you were, who had no Obligation but from your Affections, I had delivered my Child

from Ruin.

feemed resolved to have him; her Eyes were dazzled with the gay Things she expected, and unless you had positively refused your Consent, I fear Religion had not Hold enough on her Thoughts to have balanced her Love of Vanity.

Fa. But I have been perfectly careless of it, and have not done the Duty of my Place; I ought to have enquired into the Circumstances of the Person myself, and have

restrained her.

^{*}Here the Father repeats to her the Discourse between him and his Daughter, mentioned at the Beginning of this Dialogue, contioning to reproach himself with betraying his Child,

on yourself too severely, Sir; to be sure you did not know that he was a Papist, neither had you any Suspicion of it; but she had; for I put the Suspicion into her Head, and earnestly press'd her to satisfy herself about it from himself.

Fa. My Dear, I have been always too careless in these. Things: I remember the Case of your Sister here, and cannot but resteet how, when in a Passion. I told her it was none of my Business, my own Heart struck me with Reproach; for I knew it was my Duty; I wish this poor Child had been as strict and as nice in that Matter as her Sister was, though I took it ill then, I see now she was in the right of it.

Eld. Sift. You afflict yourself, Sir, for a Case that iffued well; and where, if you were in the wrong, there was no bad Consequences: Whereas in this Case, where the bad Consequences have happened, you were no way the

Caufe, 'iis all her own doing.

Fa. But as it is an Affliction to me, and that you may be fure it is, Providence seems to shew me my Sin, by my Punishment; I acknowledge I was in the wrong before, and it is not owing to my Prudence or Concern that your Sister was not ruined: Besides, every Father that has a due Concern for the Souls of his Children, will certainly enquire narrowly into the Principles as well as Morals of the Persons they match them to.

In a Word, their Father afflicted himself so much and so long upon this Matter, that his two Daughters were obliged to drop their Concern for their Sister, and apply all the Skill they had to comfort their Father: He was so overwhelmed with it, that it threw him into a deep Melancholy, and that into a Fit of Sickness, which, though he recover'd, yet he did not in a long Time thoroughly enjoy himself; always charging and reproaching himself with having ruined his Child, having regarded nothing N 4

but the Outlide of Things, and referring all their Happiness to a plentiful Fortune, and gay and extravagant

Way of Living.

This went on some Time: The eldest Daughter, who was left with the Father, managed Things so prudently, that no Notice was taken of these Things in the Family, and her Father readily agreed with both his Daughters, that it was by no Means proper to let their Sister know what they had discovered; concluding, that whenever she discovered it herself, she would come home with a sad Heart, and make her Complaint to them sast enough.

But they were all mistaken in their Sister; for though she discover'd the Thing, and liv'd a melancholy Life with her Husband upon that Occasion, yet in eight Years that she liv'd with him, she never complain'd, or made her Sorrows known to any of her Relations; but carried it with an even steady Temper, and bore all her Griefs in her own Breast: As shall be seen at large in the next

COLS GERES

Dialogue.

The End of the Second Dialogue.

has there a tion of low him the society right brown as I is

es and an interest and an expension of the second second second and a second se

model with the transmission of the state of the state of

THE RESERVE OF A CHARLES THE TENER WORKER TO DESCRIBE

I'm to the same and the same and the



DIALOGUE III.

fpeaking. lived in all the Splendor and Greatness that the highest Degree of private Persons admits of, and which a Family posses'd of an immense Wealth, could be supposed to do; he was not only very rich when he married, as might be supposed by the puble Furniture of his House, and his very valuable Collection of Pictures and Rarities, and the like, of which Mention has been made, but as he fell privately into a great Affair of remitting Money by way of England to Genoa, for Supply of the French Armies in Italy, he got that Way a prodigious Sum of Money; and yet acting only by Correspondents at Amsterdam, he was liable to no Resentment or Objections from the Government here.

After he had lived thus about eight Years, and in that Time had fix Children by this young Lady, he died; she had four of her Children living: But their Father, after having in vain tried all the Persuasions, Arguments and Intreaties (for he was too good a Husband, and to much a Gentleman to use any other Method) to bring his Wife over to the Roman Church, left her however under this terrible Affliction, that having disposed of his vast Estate in a very honourable Manner, as well to her as to her Children, yet he took the Education of her Children from her, leaving them to the Tuition of Guardians to bring them up in the Roman Religion. Nor was this the Effect of his Unkindness to her; for except in Disputes about these Things, they never had any Difference worth the Name of a Dispute in their Lives; and at his Death he left at her own Disposal above fix Times the Fortune she brought

brought him; but this of his Children was a mere Point of Conscience to him, which he could not dispense with. This was an inexpressible Grief to her, and that such and so heavy, as it is impossible to represent in this narrow Track, so as to say how far it afflicted her, or what ill Consequences attended it; the Drift and Design of this Work also lying quite another way, viz. To shew the Manner of Life, which naturally attends the best Matches, where the religious Principles of the Husband and Wife are not the same.

The eldest Sister was now married also, and married very happily and comfortably; the Principles as well as Practices of her Husband not only concurred intirely with her own, but answered in a most agreeable Manner to the Character which was given to her Father of him, viz. that

he was a Perfon truly religious.

The Father now grown old, had been a true Penitent for his Mistakes in the past Conduct of his Children, and had fully made up his Want of Care in his middle Daughter's Match, by his Difficulty in being pleafed for his eldest: She needed no Concern for, or to shew any Nicety in examining into the Person, for her Father was so, very nice for her, that scarce any Thing could please him; he rejected several good Offers, merely on Account of religious Principles, and put them off without fo much as naming them to his Daughter, till at last fixing upon a Merchant in the City, who both for Sobriety, Piety, Opinion in Religion, and Estate, suited every Way both his own Defires and his Daughter's Judgment, the Match, under fuch Circumstances, was soon made. The uninterrupted Felicity this young Lady enjoyed, in having the best Husband, the best Christian, and the best tempered Man in the World, all in one, made her the happiest Woman alive; and indeed recommended the Caution the always used in her Choice, by its Success of the standard and the

Her Father lived with this Daughter, when he was in Town, but otherwise in Oxfordsbire, with his own Sister, the Lady....., Widow of Sir James..., of whom

Mention

I

fi

b

C

W

fu

C

S

ed

ki

ed

an

al

hi

he

po

as

th

he

th

pa

cf

H

11

h

.

at

is

1.

S,

fe

d

as.

h

ic.

at

nt

nd

10

-

e+

fo.

1;

e.

as

4

11S

h,

r.

at.

an

an

ys,

in

1,

m

Mention is made in the first Part of this Work: He street very easy, having thus seen his Family all settled; for his two Sons were very well fix'd abroad, the one at Leg-borp, and the other at Cadiz: and he might really besaid to have no Affliction in the World but that of his middle Daughter, who, tho' by far the richest and most prosperous in Circumstances, and lived in the most Splendor of all the rest, yet he esteemed really miserable; and so indeed in one Sense she was.

He was at Dinner one Day at his eldest Daughter's House, his youngest Daughter being casually there also. when, while they were at Table, Letters came from the Bath, where his middle Daughter was gone with her Husband, to acquaint them, that her Husband, after an Indisposition of no more than five Days, was dead. furprized them all; for he had not so much as heard that he was ill; and his Distemper being a Pleurify, it was exceedingly violent, and carried him off very quickly. When their Father read the Letter, he was extremely surprized, and rising up from the Table, hastily, Poor Child! fays he, God has delivered her, but it is by a fad Stroke. His Daughters got up from Table terribly frighted, when they faw the Disorder their Father was in, not knowing what the Matter was; but he perceiving it, turned about suddenly, and said, Your Sister --- is a Widow. and threw down the Letter: At this they fat down again all furprized, and indeed fensibly afflicted; for, excepting his Religion, which was not all that while made publick, he was a most obliging Relation to them all-

I purposely pass over here the Incidents that may be supposed to happen in the Family on so sad an Occasion; such as the Lady's coming up from the Bath; the Concern of the Father and Sisters to comfort her; the Disposal of herself, and the Management of her Assairs, hastening to the main Story, viz. The Account she gave of her Life past, and of what she had gone through in the eight Years of her married State, upon the particular Occasion of her

Husband's being of a different Religion.

It was some Months, after her Husband's Death, and when all her Affairs were in a settled Posture, that she went to divert her Thoughts a little, and unbend her Mind from the sorrows she had been under, for she was a sincere Mourner for her Husband; I say, it was some Months after his Death, that her younger Sister having invited her down to her Seat in Hampshire, she went thither, and her Father and eldest Sister, at her Request, went all with her.

Here, upon casual discoursing of Things past, her Father, who was almost ever bemoaning his Neglect in exposing his Children, threw out some Words, which first gave her to understand that both he and her Sisters knew her Husband was not a Protestant, at which she seemed very much surprized: But as she found it was known, and that however it was still so far a Secret, as that it had gone no farther than their own Breasts, she was soon made easy; she then made a Considence of it, earnestly intreating them that it might go no farther, which they willingly promised for her Satisfaction.

But this opened the Door for variety of Conferences among them, as particularly her Sisters told her how they discovered it first, and afterwards their Father: and repeated all the Discourses they had had about it, and how, and for what Reason they had resolved never to mention it to her, unless she spoke first of it; concluding, that perhaps he might conceal it from her, and they would be very loth to discover a Thing to her, which they knew had no other Consequence at that Time, but to ruin and afflict her: Alas Sister! says she, I discovered it within a

Ay! fays her youngest Sister, you had a good Government of yourself to refrain unbosoming to some of us; en specially considering my Sister here (meaning her eldest Sister) had been so serious with you upon that very Head

before you were married.

Dear Sister, fays the Widow, to what Purpose is it for any Woman, when she is married, to complain of her Disappointments, which she knows she cannot mend?

Yo. Sift. That's true, my Dear, but who is there can

deny themselves that Ease to their Grief?

Wid. Alas! complaining is but a poor Ease to such Sorrows; 'tis like Sighing, which relieves the Heart one

Moment, and doubly loads it the next.

Yo, Eld. Well, Sifter, seeing you had so intire a Mastery over yourfelf in that Part, and you brought the Dominion of your Reason over your Passions, to so perfect an Exercise, which is what I confess I must admire you for; I say, feeing you master'd yourself so well that way, I am obliged to think you master'd yourself as well within doors: and with good Conduct, perhaps, you made it no Inconvenience to you. I wish you would let us hear how you managed, that we may see, perhaps, difference of Opinion may be so managed as to make no Breaches in a Family. and it might be as well as if it had been otherwise.

Wid. No, no, Sifter, don't fancy so: Our dear Mother was wifer than fo, and you were all wifer than I, to lay so much Stress upon it as you did; I am a Convert now to my Mother's Instructions, tho' it be too late to

help it.

ď

C

d

re

f-

75

er

r.

a-

X-

ft.

W

ed

nd

ne y;

g

ly

es

ey

e- \mathbf{p}

to ıg,

ıld

W

nd

12

n.

e, lest

ad

or

er

Yo. sift. Why, Mr----, and you lived mighty eafy: You were always mighty well with one another I thought.

Wid. It was impossible to be ill with him, he was of so excellent a Temper: But this makes my Case perfectly instructing to others, and proves effectually, that no Goodness of the Disposition, no Excess of Affection, no prudent Compliances, tho' they make the Case rather better than worfe, can yet make up, no not in the least, or any Way balance the inexpressible Deficiency that such a Breach in religious Matters makes in a Family.

Fa. Ay, ay, my Dear; I see it now, with a sad Heart, but it was far from any of my Thoughts then; you owe

all the Mifery of it to my Neglect.

Wid. Sir, I dare fay, you did not mistrust it; I remember you said, he had always been a Protestant when you was at Leghorn, and that you knew he was bred fo.

ra. Ay, my Dear; but it was my Business to have enquired

had enquired; for several Merchants told me afterwards of it; but I laid no Stress upon it; in short, I did not confider the Consequences.

To Sig. There is no need to afflict yourfelf now, Sir, about it; my Sifter is delivered another Way, Sir, and

the Thing is over.

Good of their Children at Heart; never to make light of such Things, but search them to the Bottom; and the more their Children depend upon them; the greater is their Obligation to be very careful.

Yo. Sift. Well, my Sifter is delivered from it all now.

Wid. It is a fad Deliverance, Sister; and it is a dreadful Case to be so married, as that the Death of a Husband should be counted a Deliverance; and especially of a good Husband too.

Yo. sift. I do believe he was a good Husband indeed, that one Particular excepted; but that was a terrible Circumstance, and would have made the best Husband in the

World a bad Husband to me.

Wid. Ay, Child, and so it did to me in some Cases, tho' he was otherwise the best-humoured Man, and the best Husband imaginable.

Yo. Sist. No question, there was some Uneasiness at first, but it seems you got over it; I wish you would tell us, Sister, how you managed the first Discovery between you.

Wid. Truly, Sister, the Uneasiness was not so much at first as at last, and had we lived longer together, it must of Necessity have grown worse, especially as the Children grew up.

To Sift. Indeed there you might have come to clash

in Matters very effential to your Peace.

Wid Might have clashed, do you say! indeed, Sister, we must have clashed: It was unavoidable, it could not be, that I could be easy to have the Children bred Papists, or that he could have been easy to have them bred, as be called it, Hereticks.

Yo.

2

.

-

To. si/t. It was impossible indeed; and the more you were both settled and serious in your Opinions, the more impossible it would be for you to yield that Point to one another.

Wid. Why you know, Sifter, Mr. was a very ferious grave Man; and I affure you, in his Way he was very devout; and this made his yielding to me fometimes to be very difficult to him; he had very strong Struggles

between his Principles and his Affection.

Eld. Sist. Dear Sister, it is always so where there are differing Opinions between a Man and his Wise; the more zealous and conscientious they are in their several Ways, the more difficult it is for them to yield those Points up to one another, which Kinduess and Affection may incline them to give up. But pray give us a little Account of your first Disputes about these Things.

Wid. 'Tis a fad Story, Sifter, and will bring many

grievous Things to remembrance.

Eld. Sift. I should be very unwilling to impose for irksome a Task upon you; but I think it will be very

instructing to us all.

t

ds

nª

ir,

nd

he

ht

he

eir

7.

ful

nd

1

ed,

ir-

he

ho

eft

off,

ich

uft

ld-

ash

er,

be,

or

be

Wid. Why, it was not much above a Fortnight after we came Home, as I observed to you, before I discovered it, and the Manner was thus: I wondered that every Sabbath-day my Spouse contrived some Excuse or other to avoid going to Church with me; I had taken some Notice of it, before we went Home, but the Second Sabbath-day I took upon me; to desire him to go; he seemed not to deny me, and went into the Coach with me, but pretended a sudden Thought, he was obliged to go up to St. James's; and having very civily handed me out of the Coach, and gone with me into the very Place, made a light Bow, when I could not stand to persuade, and went back.

Sift. What did he take the Coach too, and leave you

to come Home on Foot?

Wid. No, no; he never shewed me so little Respect as that; he went but as far as Temple-Bar in the Coach, and sent it back, charging the Coach-man to go and wait

for his Mistress, which he did: This, however, troubled me a little, and I began to be uneasy, tho' I knew not for what,

Sift. Why, my Dear, did nothing occur to your Thoughts, as it did to ours, about his Pictures, his Crucifixes, Altar-

pieces, and fuch Things?

Wid. No, not at all: I had heard my Father say it was the Fashion in Italy; and it being so remote from my Thoughts to imagine any thing of what was the real, Case I had indeed no Thoughts at all about it, till the sollowing Affair alarmed me. I was with him one Day in our Closer, and viewing his sine Things, the Pictures, Imagery and other Rarities, of which he had abundance, and some Pieces of Antiquity, that are of very great Value: he was mighty busy, and pleased in shewing me Things, and telling me what they were; for then they were as new to me almost, as they were to you: At last I went into the little Room within his Closet, and looked upon all the sine Things there, where you know, Sister, there are abundance of valuable Pieces of Paintings.

Sift. Yes, indeed, 'tis a charming Place.

Wid. Upon the Table there stood two fine Silver Candlesticks gilded, with large Wax-Candles in them; My Dear says 1, like an innocent Fool, these Candlesticks are very fine, I think, they are much finer than any we have about the House. My Dear, says be, if you had rather have them in your Closet, than to let them stand here, they shall be removed: No my Dear, said 1, if we should want them upon an extraordinary Occasion, it is but borrowing them of you. We said no more of that then, but the next Day he sent me in from a Goldsmith's in Drury-Lane, two Pair of Candlesticks larger and finer than these, of very curious Workmanship, and all the high embossed Work double-gilt.

Yo. Sift. So you had no need to grudge him those he

used in his Closet any more.

Wid. No, indeed. But to go on: After I had done speaking of the Candlesticks, I laid my Hands upon a large

Piece

d

10

18,

r-

it

m

al,

01-

in

na-

ind

ie:

gs,

in-

all

are

vet

My

are

her

ere,

bor-

but

urynefe,

offed

e he

done

arge

Piece of Crimson Damask, which seemed to cover something that stood upon the Table, and standing up about seven or eight Inches high in the middle, looked as if there were several Things together; and going to turn it up, I said, What is under here, my Dear? But added, with a Smile, and thinking nothing of the Matter, may I look? He smiled a little, but laying his Hand upon it too, said. I had rather not, my Dear; they are Things I brought from Italy, but nothing of Ornament. Well, well, says I, let it lie; I don't desire to look, not I, and immediately turned to look at a Picture that hung near me, and all this while I was so dull as to perceive nothing.

Eld. Sift. Your Curiosity was not much, it seems.

Wid. Innocence suspects nobody; but a strange Turn in his Countenance gave me an Alarm, which I was not aware of; for there was a visible Hurry and Consuson in his Face, when he laid his Hands upon the Piece of Damask to prevent my taking it up; and on a sudden, when I so easily and unconcernedly passed it off, all that Chagrin went off his Countenance in a Moment, and he was as bright and as good humoured again as ever; and this made me think afterwards that there was something in it more than usual.

Eld Sift. You must have been very dull, if you had not, seeing you perceived such a double Alteration; and this would have heightened my Desire to enquire farther into it.

Wid. Perhaps it did so too in me; but I saw evidently he was concerned; and why should I make him uneasy? I could have passed a hundred such Things by, and have restrained my Curiosity while I had no Suspicion.

Eld. Sift. Well, but what was this to the Case? It

feems here was no Discovery then.

Wid. Yes, here was a Discovery too, as it prepared for farther Observation: I told you that the next Day he sent me Home two Pair of Candlesticks, which were indeed very fine; and as I was admiring them, I desired to have the other setched down to compare them with; up-

0

on which he made some Difficulty, and said, he could not trust a Servant to go into his Closet alone, when Things of Consequence lay about; but, my Dear, says he, we will go up and match them.

Eld. Sift. Well, that Reason was just enough.

Wid. It was fo; and I went up with him into his Clofet, but not into the inner Room; but I observed just when he stept in, he made an extraordinary low Bow towards that Place where the Candlesticks stood. Indeed I took no Notice of it at first, for I verily thought he had stooped for something, but when he carried the Candlesticks in again, he did the same, and that gave me some Thought.

Yo. Sift. That was a Difeovery indeed.

Wid No, really it was not yet; for I was a perfect Stranger to any of their Popish Ceremonies, I scarce understood it when I was told: But, however it gave me some Idea of this being an extraordinary Place, tho' I did not know what; and I very innocently asked this soolish laughing Question; my Dear, you are mighty mannerly to your empty Rooms, you bow as if the King was there. He put it off with a Smile, and an Answer that was indeed according to Solomon, Answer a Fool in his Folly: My Dear, says he, 'tis our Custom in Italy.

Eld. Sift. He was no Fool; what he faid was very true. wid. Well, even all this while, and farther, I was still blind; for a little after I pushed into the same Place with him, not out of Curiosity, but merely by Chance; but tho the Piece of Crimson Damask lay upon the Table, yet there was nothing under it, nor did he make any Bow as

before.

Yo. Sift. No, my Dear, there was no need of it then;

for to be fure the Idol was removed.

Wid. Well, however, as that was more than I knew, it caused all my former Hesitations and Observations to vanish, till they were renew edagain upon the following Occasion: He was taken ill one Evening, in a Manner that alarmed me very much, and we were obliged to get him to Bed

Bed with all Speed; but just as he was undressing by the Bed-side, he started up in a kind of Rapture, and pulling a String which drew back a Curtain, he cast up his Eyes towards a Picture that hung there, and said some Words which I did not understand, and I perceived he cross'd himself two or three Times on the Beast, and then stept into Bed.

Fa. To one that had liv'd in Italy this had been no

Novelty at all.

d

-

e

a

n-

ne id

fh

ly

re.

ed

14

ie.

lill

ith

10

yet

25

en;

, it

va-

De-

hat

110

Wid. No, Sir, I understand it well enough now, but I did not then; however, it was fo plain then, that it needed no Explanation to me; but it was fuch a Surprize to the, that I thought I should have fainted: my Heart sunk within me, and with a Sigh faid I to myself, O Lord! I am undone! I thought I had spoken so softly, that nothing could have over-heard me; but yet so unhappy was my Passion, that he heard the last Words, and raising his Voice, My Dear, fays he, halfily, what's the Matter? What art thou undone for? I made him no Answer, wheih encreas'd his Eagerness to know what ail'd me; but I declin'd it. At last, pressing me still, I answered, my Dear, excuse me for the present, I am a little frighted; with which he rings a little Bell, that I us'd to ring for my Woman, and the being but in the next Room, came running in: I bid her fetch me a little Bottle out of my Closet, and taking a few Drops rather by a counterfeit Illness than a real, put an End to his Inquiry, and got him to fleep.

Eld. Sift. I should e'en have charg'd him with it downright, and have rav'd at him for a Rogue, that had cheat-

ed and deluded me.

with the Terror of it, and the Disappointment; but my Affection stept in the Way of all Resentment; I lov'd him tenderly; and besides, it was not a Time for it; for he was really very ill, and thought he should have died; it was a Spice or Taste of the same Dissemper that did at last kill him, for it was a Pleurisy: And after he had slept a little, he wak'd again in such a Condition, that O 2 fright-

frighted all the House, and we were forced to fetch a Surgeon out of his Bed to let him Blood.

Sift. Well, that reliev'd him, I hope.

Wid. Yes, it did; but I name it to tell you a Circumstance which attended it: We had in the House an old Man, an Italian, whom he always kept in the Counting-House to copy his Letters, and translate his Italian Accounts, and for such other Business as he employ'd him in; and they call'd him Doctor: The Surgeon we had fent for, being in Bed, did not come Time enough, and he grew black and desperately ill, which frighted me exceedingly; and when he faw I was under a Surprize, he made Signs (for he could not speak to be understood, he was so bad) to call up the old Italian. When he came into the Room, he held out his arm, and pointing at it with his Finger, every one might understand that he meant he should let him blood: upon which, immediately the old Man call'd for Things proper, and I found he had a Launcet in his Pocket. I ask'd him if he had been us'd to it: He faid, yes, Madam, I have let him blood several Times before now. In a Word, he open'd a Vein, and it gave him Ease, and he recover'd soon after.

Fa. I'll lay a hundred Pound, then, that Doctor is a

Prieft.

Wid. Yes, Sir, he is fo; and I knew is quickly after.

Fa. And after he knew that you understood it, did he not beliege you with his Discourses and Importunites, my

Dear, to turn?

Wid. No really; at least not so, as I believe is usual; he frequently let sall some Words about it, but with great Modesty; for he was really a very good sort of a Man, exceeding retir'd and devout; very mannerly and respectful: He spoke once at Table, (for sometimes my Spouse would ask me to let him sup with us) and we had been talking very chearfully, when the Doctor said something in Italian to his Master, that gave, me plain Reasons to know, that he desired I should know what he said; upon which my Spouse said to me, My Dear, what do you think

the Doctor fays? I don't know, but I am sure it is about me. Yes, says he, so it is; and he says I must tell you what it is, or else you will think he is unmannerly, to speak any thing in a Language you do not understand. Well, pray, said I, what is it he says? What pity is it, said my Spouse, such a sine Genius as my Lady your Wise is, should not be within the Pale of the Catholick Church? While my Spouse was telling me this, he look'd very earnestly at him to observe when he repeated the Words, and just as he repeated them, the good old Father lift up his Eyes, and said some Words softly, but with great Appearance of Seriousness, which it seems was to pray to Christ to convert me; and my Spouse looking very seriously too, cross'd himself, and said Amen.

Yo. Sift. This was dangerous Work indeed, Sifter; for the more ferious they were in it, the more it would have

affected me.

Wid. Indeed so it did me; I answer'd my Husband, My Dear, I hope I am; and if I thought I was not I would not sleep till I was. At which the Doctor, my Spouse repeating the Words to him, shook his Head, and said, No, no! signifying that to be sure I was not; and added, he hoped God would hear his Prayers for me; but this was the most that ever he offer'd that Way.

Fa. Well, that was nothing but what any Man, who thought himself in the right, might do, and very modelt-

ly too.

a

e

10

at

le

en

ng

to

on

nk

Wid. Indeed he always kept himself rather at a greater Distance than we desired.

To. Sift. Well, but pray go back to the Story.

Wid. Why, I told you my Husband recover'd from his Illness, but it was othrwise with me; for being now fully satisfy'd that my Spouse was a Papist, it cast me down to that Degree, and overwhelm'd my Spirits, that I was scarce able to bear it, and especially for want of somebody to lodge my Thoughts with, and open my Soul to.

Eld. Sift. Why, did you not charge him with it point-

blank? Did he not perceive your Disorder?

Wid.

Wid. He did to be fure, and press'd me with the utmost Tenderness and Importunity, to let him know what griev'd me.

Eld. Sift. Ay, and I should have told him of it in his

Ears.

Wid. Dear Silter, you are too tender a Wife yourfelf not to know, that where there is a fincere Affection, even the highest Resentment expresses itself in the softest Terms? I could afflict myself freely, but I could not think of assisting him; and tho' I do acknowledge I thought myself ill-treated, yet I could not use him ill in return.

Sift. Come, tell us what you faid to him.

Wid. Why, when he press'd me to let him know what disturb'd me, I told him, I had rather bear my Grief than complain to him; that I was too fensible he knew what I meant, when I faid I was undone; and I begg'd him not to oblige me to blame him, for not having been just to Why, my Dear, fays he, why are you undone; if your Opinion in Religion and mine may differ, must it affect our Love; cannot we be dear to one another without entering into Disputes of that Kind? Yes, said I, my Dear, I know better than to enter into Disputes with you; but I must reckon myself undone for all that. Tears stopt my very Breath for a while, for this was an open acknowledgment of his Profession; and I would fain have slattered myfelf fo much, as to hope there was yet fome Room to have thought myfelf mittaken. When he faw me fo overwhelm'd, he came to me, and took me in his Arms, and faid all the kind things it is possible to think of, to pacify me: My Dear, fays he, though you may think this a Grief to you, expect to have it made up abundantly, by all that it is possible for Man to do to oblige you: and indeed if all the affectionate Things a Man could fay or do, could make it up, it was made up to me ; if it was possible for Man to do any thing to make a Woman forget her Disappointment, he did it; and this from a Man too, who had a perfect Understanding of every Thing that could oblige and engage the Affections: In a Word, no Man could

could do more, or Woman defire more, to make up the Lofs.

Eld Sist. Well Sister, and pray tell me, did it do? Was it fully made up to you? Is it possible that two can be happy in the Condition of Man and Wife, where Opinious in Religion differ? You have had the Experience of it to be sure in its best Fortune, with all the Advantages imaginable: Now be plain, and tell us is it possible the conjugal Felicity can be compleat? Was our dear Mother in the Right or no, Sister?

Wid. Indeed, Sister, you put hard upon me, because I know I too much slighted my Mother's Injunctions; and I remember I jested with you about it, but I paid for

the Experiment,

f

3

t

I

Ē

a

f

y

4

n

0

-

a

11

1-

),

e

r

0

d

n

Eld. Sift. Dear Sister, those Things are forgotten long ago; I did not intend to reflect upon them; but I ask up-

on a ferious Account, I affure you.

Wid. Why truly, Sister, I must acknowledge it impossible: No Kindness, no Tenderness, no Affection can make it up; the Condition can never be happy, God faithfully served, Children rightly educated, the Mind perfectly easy, or the Duty of the Relation faithfully performed, where the Opinions in Religion differ.

Eld. Sift. I am of Opinion also, that it would have been the same, though your Difference had not been so

great as that of Papist and Protestant.

Wid. Ay, ay, all one! For we never entered into the Question about our Principles: I resolv'd it from the Beginning to avoid bringing on any I hing that might be unkind or disobliging between us, and he approv'd it and did the same for the same Reason; so that I never, after the first Discourse, so much as enquired what his Opinions was: It was sufficient to have the Grief that we could not worship God together, either abroad or at Home; we could not think of one another with Charity, but as deceived Persons, out of the Way of eternal Felicity, out of God's Blessing and Protection; we could not look upon one another but with Sighs and sad Hearts. Again, we could

b

N

Ci

jt

ir

C

1

0

ti

V

f

1

1

could never converse with one another upon religious Subjects, for we would not enter upon the least serious Thing but it led us into Contradictions and wild distracted Notions, which we were immediately forc'd to take the Help of our Affections to suppress, that we might not break out into Indecencies to one another.

Yo. Sift. Well, Sifter, and what became of your smart Answers to my Sister -----, when she and you talk'd of these Things, viz That if he was not of your Opinion, you would be of his; that if he was a Christian Catholick you was a Catholick Christian; and so you would have no

Difference about that?

Wid. Why, truly, Sifter, I was young, and did not confider what I faid; and besides I did not in the least suspect what my Sister suggested; and yet so far I have kept up to it, we have by the Help of Abundance of Good-humour on both Sides, and a great deal of Love on both Sides, avoided Differences and Disputes upon that Subjeet: But alas! Sister, that's but a Negative, and it can only be faid we did not quarrel, which is a great deal to jay too; but what's this to a happy Life? How was our Family guided, our Children educated, and how would they have been educated it he had lived? And how was God worshipp'd? Fie and his Priest at their Mass in the Oratory or Chapel; I and my little unhappy Babies in my Chamber and Clofet, where I mourned over them continually (rather than prayed over them) to think that fome Time or other they should be snatched from me and brought up in Popery: Nor would it have been much otherwife, if he had been of any other irreconcileable Opinion; for as I told you before, though I knew his Opinion, I never ask'd it; for any Opinion, where there is not a Harmony in worthipping, a joining in publick Prayer to God, and in joint ferving him in our Families, is the tame I hing, only not in the fame Extreme.

To. Sist. Well, but had you no private Breaches a-

bout it?

Wid. No never; we carefully avoided it: But this is but

but an Evidence of the dreadful Consequences of such Marriages in general; for where is there a Couple that can say, as we could, that they have had no Jars about it? And what Breaches have religious Differences made in Families? But if the Happiness is so little, and the evil Consequences so many, even with a Husband so exquisitely kind and obliging, and where a Woman cannot say she has any one other Thing to complain of, what must be the Case in other Families?

Yo. Sift. But, Sifter, you hint that the longer you lived,

the worse those Differences grew.

0

r

8

e

d

)-

18

1-

16-

a-

is

Wid. Why, it was impossible, Sister, but as we grew forward, these Things must have come more in our Way: We have four Children, and Mr. ----- was not a Man so indifferent in his Religion, as to be more careless about the Souls of his Children, that I assure you; and though he lest them entirely to my Management, when they were little; yet he would hint sometimes, that he hoped I would leave them free, when they grew up, to choose for themselves, as God should enlighten them; and that at least we should both stand neuter.

To. Sift. What could you fay to that?

Wid. I told him, I could not tell how far I could promise that; for if I thought myself in the right Way to Heaven, I could but ill answer it to him that gave me my Children, to stand still and see them go wrong, and not endeavour to persuade them (at least) to choose better for themselves. He told me, that was an Argument just as strong on his Side as it was on mine: And he added, smiling, How shall we do then to agree, my Dear, when it comes to that? I hope we shall not love less than we do now. I told him, I had a great many melancholy Thoughts about it; and thus at last we were always fain to drop the Discourse: But to this Hour I cannot conceive how we should have done to have divided our Children's Instruction between us, if he had lived to see them grow up.

Fa. Well, my Dear, God has otherwise ordered it;

and I hope the Children will have the Benefit of a good

Instruction now without that Interruption.

Wid. Alas! Sir, I perceive you do not know their Case yet; and this is a remaining Grief to me that I have not mentioned.

Fa. What's that, Child?

Wid. Why, Sir, by his Will he has appointed the old Priest, whom I named above, to be Tutor to my two Sons, and has settled his Estate so, that unless the Trustees bring them up Roman-Catholicks, a great deal of the Estate goes from them; so that I am to be robbed of my Children.

Word of it! And what has he done then with his two

Daughters.

Wid He has left them to me-

Fa. Did you know this before, Child? Had you any

Discourse about it before he died?

Wid. Yes, Sir, as much as the Violence of his Distemper would admit; I intreated, I persuaded, I argued, as much as Tears and my oppressed Thoughts would allow me; for I thought my Heart would have burst while I talked to him, to see his Condition, whom I loved as my own Soul, and to think what was to befall my Children; you can hardly conceive what a Time it was to me; it wounds my very Spirit to look back upon it.

Eld. Sift. It was a very bitter Thing, no doubt; but

what faid he to you.

Wid. He begged of me not to importune him: He told me it was far from being Unkindness to me, but his Conscience obliged him to it, and he could not die in Peace, if he did not, as far as in him lay, provide for the Souls of his Children.

Fa. Why, if it was his Conscience, how came it to pass

he did not do the like by his Daughters?

Wid. Why he said, he thought I had a Right to their Government as a Half of the Family; for, my Dear, says he, we are Partners: Bur, says he, I intreat you, and, as

fai

to

1

H

W

y

fu

h

CL

F

n

th

P

b

th

te

th

far as I am able to do it, enjoin you to it, let the poor innocent Babes be reconciled to the Church, and brought up in the Catholick Faith: and I hope you will in God's due Time embrace it yourfelf.

Yo Sift. What was you able to fay to him?

Wid. I bless God I made no Promise about my Children; nor indeed was I able to speak to him for Grief; for he was in such Agonies, that my Heart could not hold to stay by him; and the next Morning he died, and now I am a dreadful Example of the miserable Condition of a married State, where Principles of Religion differ, though with the best Husband in the World.

Fa. But, my Dear, do not affliet yourself now about

your Sons.

boo

ale.

not

old

·u-

of

of

la

WO

ny

m.

as

WO

e I

my

en;

it

but

old

on-

ce,

uls

pais

eir

ays

25

Wid. Not afflict myfelf, Sir! Is that possible?

Fa. Yes, yes, they shall not be bred up Papists, I'll affure you, for all that he has done to bring it to pass.

Wid. Alas, Sir! they will be taken away from me.

Fa No, no; nor shall they be taken away from you neither; our Laws gives you a Right to the bringing up your own Children; and as for the Doctor, I'll engage he shall give you no Disturbance; he knows his own Circumstances, and I'll take care that he shall take it for a Favour to be concealed here, and leave all to you.

Wid. But then the Estate will go from my Children too. Fa. Perhaps not neither; but if it should you have e-

nough for them.

Wid. Well, that's none of my Care; let me but keep them from a wrong Education, I'll willingly leave that Part to fall as it will.

To. Sift. But dear Sifter, did Mr. ---- never try you

by Arguments to bring you over to him?

Wid. Only by all that he could ever advise; except as I said before: For I must do that Justice to his Memory, that he never offered any Thing that was rough, or threatening, or limiting, or unkind; but all on the contrary, to the highest Extreme.

Yo,

Yo. Sift. That was the Effect of his extraordinary good

Breeding, and his being fo much a Gentleman.

Wid. Not that altogether, Sister, though that might join; but it was the Effect of an excellent Disposition, and of an inexpressible Affection to me in particular; for otherwise he was the most zealous Man in his way that ever was heard of, and thought every body an Enemy to him, that would not be of his own Opinion.

Eld. Sift. Did he never go about to bribe you to it?

Wid. O Sister! very frequently; and that with all the Subtilty of Invention in the World; for he was lalways giving me Presents upon that very Account.

Fa. Presents to a Wife! What do they signify? 'Tis but taking his Money out of one pocket, and putting it into the other; they must all be appraised, Child, in the

Personal Estate.

Wid. It has been quite otherwise with him, indeed, Sir; for he has made it a Clause in his Will, that all the Presents he gave me shall be my own, to bestow how I please; besides all the rest that he has left me more than he was obliged to do.

Eld. Sist. Then they feem to be considerable.

Wid. He has, first and last, given me above 3000 l. in Presents, and most of them on this very Account: But one was very extraordinary, I mean, to that Purpose.

Eld. Sift. I suppose that is your Diamond Cross.

Wid. It is so; he brought it home in a little Case, and coming into my Room one Morning before I was dressed, hearing I was alone, he told me smiling and very pleasant, he was come to say his Prayers to me: I contess, I had been a little out of Humour just at that Time, having been full of sad Thoughts all the Morning about the grand Point, and I was going to have given him a very unkind Answer; but his Looks had so much Goodness and Tenderness always in them, that when I looked up at him, I could retain no more Resentment: Indeed, Sister, it was impossible to be angry with him.

Eid. Sist. You might well be in Humour indeed, when

he brought you a Present worth above fix hundred Pounds.

wid But I had not feen the Present, when what I am

telling you paffed between us.

Eld. Sift. Well, I ask Pardon for interrupting you; pray go on where you left off, when he told you he was come to fay his Prayers to you.

Wid. I told him, I hoped he would not make an Idol of

his Wife.

od

nd-

0-

er

m,

he

ays

Tis

inthe

ed,

the v I

han

in.

one

and

fed,

ant, had

ring

and cind

en-

n, I

was

hen

Eld. Sift. Was that the ill-natured Answer you were about to give him?

Wid. No, indeed; I was going to tell him, he need not

worship me, he had Idols enough in the House.

Eld. Sift. That had been bitter and unkind indeed; I

hope you did not fay fo.

Wid. Indeed I did not; nor would I have faid fo for a thousand Pounds; it would have grieved me every Time I had reflected on it afterwards as long as I had lived.

Eld Sift. It was so very apt a Return, I dare say I should not have brought my Prudence to have mastered the Plea-

fure of fuch a Repartee.

Wid. Dear Sifter, 'tis a forry Pleasure that is taken in grieving a kind Husband; besides, Sister, as it was my great Mercy that my Husband strove constantly to make his Difference in Religion as little troublesome and offensive to me as possible, it would very ill have become me to make it my Jest; it had been a kind of bespeaking the Uneasineiles which it was my Happiness to avoid.

Eld. Sift. Well, you had more Temper than I should have had, I dare fay; but I must own you were in the

right: Come, pray, how did you go on?

Wid. Why, he answered, he hoped he worshipped no Idols but me; and if he erred in that Point, whoever reproved him, he hoped I would not.

Eld. Sift. Why that's true too: besides, 'tis not so of-

ten that Men make Idols of their Wives.

Wid. Well, while he was faying this, he pulls out the Jewel, and opening the Case, takes a small crimson String

that it hung to, and put it about my Neck, but kept the Jewel in his Hand, so that I could not see it; and then taking me in his Arms, Sit down, my Dear, says he, which I did upon a little Stool: Then he kneeded down just before me, and kissing the Jewel, let it go, saying something in Italian, which I did not understand; and then looking up in my Face, Now, my Dear, says be, you are my Idol.

Eld. Sift. Well, Sifter, 'tis well he is dead.

Wid. Dear Sister, how can you say such Words to me? Eld. Sist. He would certainly have conquered you at hast.

Wid. If the tenderest and most engaging Temper, the sincerest and warmest Affection in Nature could have done

it, he would have done it, that's certain.

Eld. Sift. And I make no doubt but they are the most dangerous Weapons to attack a Woman's Principles; I cannot but think them impossible to resist: Passion, Unkindness, and all sorts of conjugal Violence, of which there is a great Variety in a married Life, are all nothing to them: You remember, Sister, some Lines on another Occasion, but very much to the Case;

Force may indeed the Heart invade, But Kindness only can persuade.

Wid. I grant that 'tis difficult to refift the Influence of fo much Affection; and every thing that came from fo fincere a Principle, and to a Mind prepoffessed with all the Sentiments of Tenderness and Kindness possible to be expressed, made a deep Impression; but I thank God I stood my Ground.

Eld. Sist. Well, well, you would not have stood it long, I am persuaded; and this is one of the great Hazards a Woman runs in marrying a Man of a differing Religion, or a differing Opinion from herself. viz. That her Assection to her Husband is her worst Snare; and so that which is her Duty, and her greatest Happiness, is made the most

dan-

M

ni

W

ge

fai

he

YO

211

m fa

fla

fo

th

In

hi

in ki

th

th m

he

ba

is.

Ca

lf

he

he

he

a

dangerous Gulph she can fall into: Well might our dear Mother warn us from marrying Men of different Opinions.

Wid It is very true, I acknowledge it; my Love was my Temptation, my Affection to my Husband went always nearest to stagger my Resolution; I was in no Danger upon any other Account.

Yo. Sift. Well, but pray go on about the Jewel; what

faid you to him?

e

n

n

at

ne

ne

oft

I

11-

ch

ng

er

of

fo

he

X-

od.

ıg,

5 3

on,

ec-

ch

oft

Wid. Truly, Sister, I'll be very plain with you; When he kiffed the Jewel on his Knees, and muttered as I tell you, in Italian, I was rather provoked than obliged; and I said, I think you are saying your Prayers indeed, my Dear; tell me what you are doing? What did you say?

To Sift. Indeed I should have been frighted.

Wid. Dear Sister, let me confess to you, fine Presents, stattering Words, and the affectionate Looks of so obliging, so dear, and so near a Relation are dreadful Things, when they assault Principles; the glittering Jewel had a strange Instuence, and my Affections began to be too partial on his Side: O let no Woman that values her Soul venture into the Arms of a Husband of a different Religion! the kinder he is, the more likely to undo her; every Thing that endears him to her, doubles her Danger; the more she loves him, the more she inclines to yield to him; the more he loves her, the stronger are the Bonds, by which he draws her; and her only Mercy would be to have him barbarous and unkind to her.

Yo. Sift. It is indeed a fad Cafe, where to be miserable is the only Safety; but so it is, no doubt; and such is the Case of every Woman that is thus unsuitably matched: If her Husband is kind, he is a Snare to her; if unkind, he is a Terror to her; his Love, which is his Duty, is her Ruin; and his slighting her, which is his Scandal, is her Provided.

her Protection.

wid. It was my Cafe, dear Sifter; fuch a Jewel! fuch a Husband! How could I speak an unkind Word? Every

Thing

Thing he did was fo engaging, every Thing he faid was fo moving, what could I say or do?

Eld. Sift. Very true; and that makes me fay, he would

have conquered you at last.

Wid. Indeed I can't tell what he might have done, if he had lived,

Yo. Sift. Well, but to the Jewel: What faid you to him?

Wid. I stood up and thanked him with a kind of Ceremony, but told him, I wished it had been rather in any other Form. Why, my Dear, Jays he, should not the two most valuable Forms in the World be placed together? I told him, that as he placed a religious Value upon it, he should have it rather in another Place. He told me, my Breast should be his Altar; and so he might adore with a double Delight: I told him, I thought he was a little profane; and fince I did not place the fame Value upon it, or make the same Use of it, as he did, I might give him Offence by mere Necessity, and make that Difference which we had both avoided with fo much Care, break in upon us in a Cale not to be refisted. He answers ed, No, my Dear, I am not going to bribe your Principles, much less force them; Put you what Value you think fit upon it, and give me the Liberty: I told him I hoped I should not undervalue it as his Present, if I did not overvalue it upon another Account. He returned warmly, my Dear, the last is impossible; and for the first 'tis a Trifle; give it but Leave to hang where I have placed it, and that's all the Respect I ask you to show it on my Account

Yo. sift. Well, that was a Favour you would not deny,

if a Stranger had given it you.

wid. Dear Sister, you are a Stranger to the Case; if you had seen what was the Consequence of it, you would have been frighted, or perhaps have fallen quite out with him.

Yo. Sift. I cannot imagine what Consequences you mean.

Wid.

wid. Why, first of all, he told me, that now he would be perfectly easy about my Salvation, and would cease to pursue me with Arguments or Intreaties in religious Matters.

To sift. What could he mean by that?

wid. Why, he said, he was sure that blessed Form that hung so near my Heart, would have a miraculous Influence some Time or other, and I should be brought home into the Bosom of the Catholick Church.

ro. Sift. Well, I should have ventured all that, and have

flighted the very Thoughts of it.

728

ald

if

to

re-

iny

WO

ert

It,

me,

ore s a

lue

ght

Dif-

are,

ver:

you

m I

did

ned

first

pla-

on

eny,

; if

ould

with

you

Wid: You cannot imagine what Stress he laid on it; now he said every good Catholick that saw me but pass by them, would pray for me; and that every one in particular would exercise me by the Passon of Christ out of the Chains of Heresy.

To Sift. What faid you to him?

wid. I put it off with a Smile, but my Heart was full, I scarce knew how to hold; and he perceived it easily, and broke off the Talk a little; but he fell to it again, till he saw the Tears stood in my Eyes, when he took me in his Arms, and kis'd me again; kis'd my Neck where the Cross hung, and then kis'd the Jewel, repeating the Word Jesu two or three Times, and left me.

Eld. Sift. This was all Superstition, Sister; I should not have born it; I would have thrown the Jewel in his Face,

or on the Ground, and have fet my Foot on it.

Wid. No, Sister, you would not have done so, I am sure; neither was it my Business to do so; my Business was not to quarrel with my Husband about his Religion, which it was now too late to help, but to keep him from being uneasy about mine.

Eld. Sift. I should not have had so much Patience; I would not have lived with him; I do not think it had

been my Duty.

Wid. Nay, Sister, that's expressly contrary to the Scripture, where this very Case is stated in the plainest Manner imaginable, The Woman that bath a Husband that believeth not, if he will dwell with her, let her not leave him,

1 Cor. vii. 13.

Eld. Sift. That's true indeed; I spoke rashly, Sister, in that; but it was a Case, I confess, I do not know what I should have done in it; I would not have bore it then,

Wid. That had been very disobliging.

Eld sift. I would have obliged him to have foreborne his little idolatrous Tricks then, and used them on other Occasions.

Wid. That had been to desire him not to be a Roman Catholick: Why, in foreign Countries, that are Popish, as I understand, they never go by a Cross, whether it be on the Road, or on any Building, but what they pull off their Hats.

Fa. So they do, my Dear, and often kneel down, tho' it be in the Dirt, and fay over their Prayers.

Wid. It is impossible to tell you how many Attacks I

had of that Kind when I wore this Jewel.

Fa. I do not doubt of it; especially if he brought any Strangers into the Room: How did you do, Child, when the Venetian Ambassador dined at your House? Had you it on then?

Wid. Yes, Sir, my Spouse desired me to put it on, and I could not well deny him: But I did not know how to behave; for the Ambassador and all his Retinue paid so many Bows and Homages to me, or to the Cross, that I scarce knew what to do with myself, nor was I able to distinguish their good Manners from their Religion; and it was well I did not then understand Itaiian, for, as my Dear told me afterwards, they said a great many religious Things that would have given me Offence.

Fa. Those Things are so frequent in Italy, that the Protestant Ladies take no Notice of them, and yet they all wear Crosses, but sometimes put them out of Sight.

Wid. I did so afterwards; I lengthened the String it hung to, that it might hang a little lower; but it was too big, if it went within my Stays it would hurt me: Nor was it much odds to him; for if he law the String he knew the Cross was there, and it was all one.

10. Sift. Did he nie any Ceremony to it after the first

Time?

r

n

18

e,

0

I

y

n

u

nd

to

fo

I

di-

nd

ny

us

he

ney

it

too

lor

Wid. Always when he first came into any Room where I was, he was fure to give me his Knee with his Bow, and kis the Cross as well as his Wife.

Eld. Sift. I should never have born it.

Wid. You could never have relisted it more than I, for I did what I could; but his Answer was clear, My-Dear, says he, take no Notice of me, let my Civilities be to you; take them all to yourself, I cannot show you too much Respect; believe it is all your own, and be easy with me.

Eld. sift. How could he bid you believe, what you knew to be otherwise? Why did you not leave it off, and re-

proach him with the Difference?

wid. Dear Sister, I did so for Months together: But then he doubled his Ceremonies, and told me, I only mortified him then by obliging him to reverence the Place where once the blessed Figure had been lodged, as the holy Pilgrims worshipped the Sepulchre.

Eld. Sift. He was too hard for you every Way, Sifter. Wid. Ay, and would have been too hard for you too.

if you had had him.

Eld. Sift. It is my Mercy that I had him not.

Wid. Well, it was my Mercy too, that as I had him, I had less Inconvenience with the unhappy Circumstance, than I must have had perhaps with any other Man of his Principles in the World.

Eld Sift. That's true, only this I must add, viz. that those engaging Ways would certainly, first or last, have

brought you to Popery.

Wid. I hope not, Sifter; but I cannot say, when I seriously reflect on it, how far I might have been left.

Fa. My Dear, let me ask you a Question or two about that: I know the first Method they take in such Cases is, to let you see that you have been mistaken in your Noti-

P 2

ons about Popery; that the Difference is not so great as has been suggested unto you: that we are all Christians; that we worship the same God, believe the same Creed, expect eternal Life by the Merits of the same Saviour; and the like; and by this Method they bring us at first not to have such frightful Ideas of the Roman Catholick Religion as we had before.

Wid. That is true; and this I had frequently in Discourse; and, I confess, such Discourse had some Effect

on me.

To. Sift. It lessened the Aversion you had to them no doubt.

Wid. It is true, they became not so frightful to me as before; but they had another Argument which my Dear often us'd to me, and it was this: My Dear, says be, all your own Divines, and all that have written on these Subjects, own, that a Papist, as you call us, may be sav'd; that it is possible for us to go to Heaven. Our Church have no Room to believe so of the Protestants, Why, if you may go to Heaven among us, should you not join with us?

Eld. Sift. I know not what Answer I should have given to that.

Wid. I know not what your Answer would have been, but I'll tell you what mine was; I told him, I did not know but it might be so; and I was willing to have as much Charity as I had Affection for him: But as for my-felf, I was sure I could not go to Heaven that Way, because I must act against my own Light.

Yo. Sift. That was the true Answer indeed: What

could he fay to it?

Wid. Then he told me, he would pray for me that I might be farther enlightened; and he did not doubt but to prevail: I thank'd him, and told him, I would do the fame for him; and that tho' perhaps it might not be with fo strong a Faith, I was sure it would be with as earnest a Desire.

To, Sift. Well, you stood your Ground nobly, Sister;

but 'tis a Mercy to you, that your Perseverance was tried no farther: 'Tis a dreadful Thing to have so dangerous

an Enemy fo near one.

Wid It is true, there lay my Danger; for I must own Words spoken with so much Tenderness have a singular Effect, and sink deeper in the Mind than others, especially where the Affection is so mutual as it was with us.

Eld. Sift. Why, Sifter, do you think in Time his Tenderness, and his affectionate Way of treating you would

not have abated?

1

1

it

I

at

e

h

Wid. I often fear'd it, but indeed I never found it; fometimes I, fuggested it to him, that I fear'd it; and one Day I told him, that if I did not turn, I was afraid be would. He guess'd what I meant, but would have me explain myself: Why, my Dear, says I, when I reflect what your Thoughts are about Protestants, That they are out of the Pale of the Church, and in a Condition that they cannot be faved, I cannot but apprehend, that if I do not come over to your Opinion, your Love to me will abate, and at last turn into a stated Aversion and Hatred: How can you love an Object which you think God hates? My Dear, fays he, taking me very affectionately in his Arms, I will prevent all your Fears, by telling you, that, were what you mention possible, it could not be, till I utterly despair'd of your ever being brought over to the Church; and I shall never be brought to believe, but God will open your Eyes first or last; and, besides my earnest Defire to persuade you, and win you to embrace the true Religion, will teach me to do it by all the Tenderness and Love that it is possible for me to shew you; for to be unkind to you would be the Way to drive you farther off: But, be it as it will, I can never abate my Affection to you; and, my Dear, fays he, (with the most obliging pasfionate Air of Concern, that it was possible to shew) that I hope to love you tenderly and violently, is not the Way to keep you at a Distance from the Church, but rather to draw you, to engage you, and let you see, that Peace, Love, Joy, Charity, and all the Virtues of a Christian,

are to be found among us, and not that we are Furles and Tyrants, as we have been represented. And when he had faid this, holding me still in his Arms, he kifs'd me feveral Times, and went on: My Dear, fays he, let God alone change your Heart his own Way; I'll never take any Method, but that of loving you fincerely and most pasfionately while I live, and praying for you even after I am in Heaven. While he faid this, I faw fuch an inexpressible Tenderness in his Countenance, and every Word came from him with fuch Passion, that I could not hold from Tears: But he had not done with me yet; for, while he held me in one Arm, he put his other Hand in his Pocket, and taking out his Pocket-Book, he bid me open it. and there dropt out a loofe Paper doubled pretty thick, which I took up, and went to put it in again. Take that Paper, my Dear, fays he, and put it up; you shall have a Pledge for the Continuance of my Affection to you when ther you change your Opinion, or no. I open'd it, but could read very little of it, for I had but newly begun to learn Italian. What is it, my Dear? faid I. It is, faid he, an Affignment on the Bank of Genoa for 2000 Ducats a Year, and it shall be made over to your Father in Trust for you, and to whoever you will bestow it after you.

Eld. Sift. Well, Sifter, I would never tell this Story to any Protestant Lady, that was in the least Danger of mar-

rying a Roman.

ra. Why, Child, if her Story be told with it, I think it

may be told to Advantage.

Eld. Sist. It may teach them indeed to pray, Lead us not into Temptation. Well, Sister, I must repeat what I have said before to you, tho' it does grieve you; 'tis your great Mercy that he is dead.

Wid. O do not speak such a Word, Sister, it wounds

my very Soul.

Eid. Sift. Pray answer me this short Question then:

Would you marry fuch another Papilt?

Wid. There's not such another upon Earth, Sister; and besides, how can you name the Word? That's the unkindest

unkindest Thing you could think of; I must break off

the Discourse.

Eld. Sift. Do not call it unkind; I do not mean it the Way you take it: Suppose Things at the remotest Distance you can, or suppose it to be any other body's Case, Would you advise any other Person that had such an Offer, I say, would you advise them to marry such another?

Wid. No, Sister, not to be a Princess.

Eld. Sift. I am answer'd; and I must own, I should

take them for distracted, if they did.

Wid. Unless the Lady resolved to turn Papist; and if that, she would do best to do it before-hand, openly and avowedly, that she might not be under the Resection of

doing it on a worse Account, viz. by Compulsion.

Yo. Sift. But after you have said so many Things of him, that are enough to recommend him, not to the Affection, but even to the Admiration of any one, What can you say to persuade any young Woman not to think that you were very happy in him, and that consequently they would be so with such another.

Wid. O Sister! Do not suggest that I was happy with him; I had as few happy Hours, as it was possible for any

one to have, that ever had a good Husband.

Yo Sift. How can you convince any one of that?

Wid. Why, Sister, it is plain to any one that knows wherein the Happiness of Life consists: It is true, I wanted nothing; I liv'd in the Abundance of all Things; I had the best humour'd Husband on Earth, and one that lov'd me to an Extreme; which, had not our Case indeed call'd for so much Affection another Way, would have been a Sin; for, in a Word, he sum'd up all his earthly Felicity in his Wife.

Eld. Sist. If you were to give that Account to the Gentlemen of this Age, they would say you were writing.

the Character of a Fool.

Wid It is no Matter for that; it was his Mercy and mine too; for if it had been otherwise, we had been the P 4 miserablest

miserablest Creatures alive; it was bad enough as it was; and all that knew him, will grant that he was no Fool.

Jo

m

it

be

bu

OL

te

A

W

th

D

fay

Yo. Sift. But what do you think then would have been the Consequence, if, as you say, he had lov'd you less?

Wherein must you have been miserable?

Wid. Why, Sister, if his abundant Affection had not closed every Debate with Kindness, whither must we have run? If he had not checked all the Forwardness of his religious Zeal for converting me, by his Love to me, to what Severity in our mutual Reproaches should we have gone on! In a Word, Sister, I must have turn'd, or turn'd out of Doors: I must have been a Papist, or we must have parted.

and his Wife are in the very same Case, and yet they agree

well enough.

Wid. Dear Sister, how can you name them! He is a Papist, and she is a Protestant, and when the Name is taken away, it is hard to tell whether either of them have any Religion or no, nor do they care one Farthing which Way either goes: People that can live easy without Religion, may live easy without any Religion; that is not the Case we are speaking of.

Eld. Sift. There is a Difference there, I confess.

wid. But if, Sister, a religious Life be the only Heaven upon Earth, as we have been taught to believe, tell me, if you represent such a Case to yourself, what must it be for two to live together, who place their Happiness really in such a Life as we call religious, but differ so extremely about what Religion to build it upon? That agree in the general, but not in the Particulars; that aim mutually at the same End, viz. Going to Heaven, but turn Back to Back as to the Way thither? Can a religious Life be form'd between such as these! and if not, then they are mutually deprived of that Heaven upon Earth, which, as you and I agree, is alone to be found in a religious Life.

Eld, Sift. That is true, but then in such a Case the En-

.joyment

Joyment must be referved and singular, and a Woman

must keep her Religion to herself.

Wid. But you will allow her then to be depriv'd at once of all focial Religion, of all Family-Religion, and by confequence of all the Comfort of a religious Husband.

Eld. Sigt. Nay, that is true, and I am not speaking for it; but asking your Experience, whether with so tender

a Husband, as you had, it might not be otherwise?

wid. Dear Sifter, his Tenderness, as I said before, was my great Mercy, as it made him bear with my Obstinacy, as he called it: Had he had the same Tenderness, and been indifferent in his Principles, I might have turn'd him; but had he wanted that Tenderness, and yet been as zealous in his Religion as he was, he must have turn'd me, or I must have liv'd a dreadful Life with him.

re. Sift. I find he was a mighty religious Man in his

Way.

Wid. To the greatest Degree imaginable devout, and

very serious, I affure you.

yet he was the more fober, the more honest, and every Way the better prepar'd to be a good Man.

Wid. His Devotion made him, without doubt, the better Man: But if it had not been for the Restraints of his Affection, it had certainly made him the worse Husband.

Yo. Sist. So that in this Question of marrying a Man of a different Opinion in Religion, you suppose, that the more devout and serious the Person is in his Way, the worse Husband.

Wid. Without question it is so: The Zeal in their own Opinions makes them always uneasy and impatient with their Wives, reazing and baiting them with impertinent Disputes, and even driving them by force of restless Importanities (which, by the Way, is the worst Sort of Perfecution) into a Compliance.

To Sist. I agree with you in that Part: But Sister, you fay, that even when your Husband's Love was your Pro-

tection

tection from these Importunities, you were yet unhappy,

and could not be able to lead a religious Life.

Wid. No, Sister, I did not say so: I said we could not have a religious Family; all social Religion was lost; mutual Help and Assistance in Religion were wanting; publick worshipping God in the Family as a House, could not be set up; Education and Instruction of Children was all destroyed; Example to Servants and Inseriors all spoiled; nothing could be of Religion, but what was merely perfonal and retired.

Aunt. There indeed you are right, Niece.

wid. I affure you, Madam, from my Experience, that next to the having the Husband and Wife be religious, or at least religiously inclined, they that would have a religious Family, should take as much Care as possible to have religious Servants.

Aunt. I agree with you in that, my Dear, with all my

k

e

B

a

al

tì.

th

W

hi

10

T

m

of

re

tol

a]

mu

the

me

the

Re

Te

Heart.

wid. It is impossible to preserve the necessary Rules of a religious Family without it, or to have a due Regard shewn to the Orders which must be given on that Account.

Aunt. Nay, Child, I go farther than that; I infift, that our Servants ought to be so chosen, as to be of the same

Opinions too in Religion as ourselves.

Wid. I have not so much consider'd that Part indeed; but I believe, Madam, the Reasons for it are very good.

Aunt. I have a great deal to fay to that from my own Experience.

Eld, Sift. And fo have I too, Madam, from what I have

feen in some Families of my acquaintance.

Wid. I have feen enough of it in my little Family, to make me refolve, that while I have a Family, and can keep any Servants, I will entertain none but fuch as worship God the same Way as I worship him.

Eld. Sist. And did so before you took them, I hope you

mean fo, Sifter.

uid. Yes, indeed, I do mean fo too.

Aunt. I must put in an Exception, Niece, there, in be-

half of poor ignorant Creatures, that may come into a Family, untaught, and are willing to be instructed in Things that are good-

Wid. I know not what to fay to that Part, because I am

but ill qualified for a School-mistress.

Aunt. Well, we will discourse of this by itself, Niece, for I have a great deal to say upon that Subject.

wid. With all my Heart, Madem,

Aunt. But in the mean Time, Child, let us go now

where we left off.

.

ot

1

1;

r-

at

or

gi-

ve'

my

of

ard

int.

hat

me

ed;

ood.

pwo

ave

, to

keep

hip

you

be-

Wid. There was as much Religion in our House, as it was possible there should be, in our Circumstances; for both of us defired it in general, and purfued it in particular, only we could not join in the Manner; and it was a perfect Scene of Confusion, to see how Religion was carried on among us; the Servants were fome Papilts, fome Protestants, some Pagans; for we had three East-Indian Blacks and one Negro among our People. The Christian an Servants were every now and then together by the Ears about perfuading the Negro to turn Christian, and be baptized, but could not bear to think what fort of Christian the poor Creature should be; one of our Men, an Italian, would have him be a Papist, and the other would have him to be a Protestant; and the poor Negro was so confounded between them, that he could not tell what to do. The Negro was a fenfible inquifitive Fellow, and had by mere asking Questions on both Sides, gotten a great deal of Knowledge of Religion; but was merely stopt in his Search after farther Particulars by the impertinent Quarrels of those Servants who pretended to instruct him; Both told him he must believe a God, a future State, a Heaven, a Hell, a Refurrection to Life or to Death, and that he must be saved by a Redeemer. They agreed exactly in their Description of the Joys of eternal Life, the Torments of Hell, and particularly they had joined in giving the poor Negro a frightful Apprehension of Hell, as the Reward of his doing wickedly, and of the Devil as a Tempter, an Enemy and Tormentor; fo that the poor Fellow

Fellow would pray to God very heartily to fave him from

Hell, and to keep him from the Devil.

But when these poor ignorant Fellows began to instruct him how to worship God, and who to look to as his Redeemer and Saviour; to talk to him about reading the Scriptures, and fuch Things, they fell out to the last Degree; the English Foot-man told the Italian he was an Idolater, and that was worse than a Heathen; that Negum (for so the poor Negro was called) was as good a Christian as he, for tho' he did not worship in the Name of Christ, yet as he (the Italian Foot-man) worshiped a piece of Wood for a Saviour, Christ would not accept him; and it was as bad as Negum's worshipping a Hobgoblin, or any Thing else. The Italian told him, he was a Heretick, and his Religion was no Religion at all; and that he was an Enemy to God, and to the Church; and told Negum, that if he believed what that Fellow faid, the Devil would take him away alive. They had many Quarrels about it; but one Day above the rest they came to that Height, that they fell to fighting; it feems, the rest of the Servants had parted them before their Master or I heard of it; but as we were both walking together in the Evening in our Garden, we by mere chance faw the Negro in the Kitchen-Garden crying: His Master saw him first, and called him to us; and the Fellow came with a Book in his Hand, but terribly afraid his Master should be angry.

bo

th

lo

R

fu

Pu

ab

me

D

the

WO

ter.

ble.

What's the Matter, Negum? fays his Master; and so

they began to talk.

Neg. No muche Matter, no muche.

Ma. Why you were crying, Negum: What did you cry about? Has any body beat you?

Neg. No muchè cry, no beate me.

Ma. What then, Negum? What Book have you got there?

Neg. Indeede me no go away*, Sir; me no go, me be

a Christian, no indeedè.

* Kneels down.

The Fellow, it seems, was afraid his Master would think, if he turned Christian, he would be baptized, and so think himself free; and he kneeled down to his Master to beg him not to be angry.

Ma. Well, well, thou shalt be a Christian, Negum, if thou hast a Mind to it; God forbid any body should him der thee: What Book's that?

Neg. Bible-Book; me reade this Book to be Christian.

Ma. Who gave you that Book to read?

Neg Augustino.

m

et

e-

10

e-

an

li-

of

nd

ack,

was

uld

tit;

hat

had

but

our

en-

him

but

l fo

you

got

e be

f he ree;

Ma. Let me fee it *.

Neg. Me have other Bible-Book † too.

Ma. Let's fee that too §

Ma. Who gave you this too?

Neg. William.

Ma. Well, you understand the Languages; read them both: But, poor Fellow thou hast got but two forry Teachers.

When he gave the Books back to him, and bid him read them both, he turned to me; My Dear, Jay he, these Fellows pretend to inttruct this poor Negro in the Christian Religion, when they can't agree about it themselves, I am sure: Upon which Negum makes his Master a Bow, and puts in his Word.

Neg. No indeede, they no agree; they fighte just now

about teache me.

Ma. What did they fight?

Neg. Yes, indeede they fighte just now; they no teache me; one say, me go to the Devil; tother say, me go to the Devil; they no teache me to go away from the Devil; they make me no know what I do

Ma. And was that it you cry'd about, Negum?

Neg. Yes indeede, me cry to go to the Devil; me would go away from the Devil.

Ma. You must pray to God to keep you from the Devil.

† He pulls another Book out.

^{*} He look'd in the Book, and faw it was an Italian Miffal or Pfal-

His Master looked in that too, and found it was an English Bi-

Neg. Yes, indeede, me do pray God keep away the Devil.

Ma. You must pray to God to teach you too.

Neg. God teache me! No, sugustime teache me! No,

William teache me! God teache me, how that?

Here my Spoule found how the Cafe stood, and turns ing to me, My Dear, fays be, thefe Fellows quarrel continually about this poor Man, and to in the End he will be brought rather to abhor the Christian Religion in general, than to turn Christian at all; while one pulls him one Way, and one another: Now what Course must you and I take? I cannot pretend to defire him to be made a Protestant; I am sure you won't desire him to be a Catholick; and so the poor Fellow must be lost I told bim, it was a critical Case in which I knew not how to act; but as they were his Servants in particular, and that he brought his Negro out of Italy with him, I thought they were to be at his Disposal and Direction rather than mine. My Dear, Jays be, there is nothing mine but what it yours; don't shift it off so, but tell me what I shall do! I confess I trembled when he faid so; for I was afraid some Debate would fall in between us, in consequence of the Case; however, I answer'd him thus: My Dear, you determined before for me, what you might be fure would be my Thoughts? but what can I determine about your Servants? Well, my Dear, fays he, I'll do as Solomon did in the Case of dividing the Child, I'll shew you that I am the truest Lover of his Soul, I mean of us two; for rather than he should not be taught to worship God at all, let him be taught the Way of the Country where we are if we divide as our two Men have done, he will not be taught at all.

Upon this Principle he acted, and confented I should act in it as I saw Cause; upon which I sent the Negro down to a Country Tenant we have in Essex, upon Pretence to learn to plow and sow, and do Country Work, and there I kept him near a Twelvemonth: At the

fa

is

ti

le

0

tr

1

he

ci

га

H

he

ple

of

th

ha

far

So

or

at

thi

aF

and

as 1

mil

one

is I

OW

Cal

fame Time the Farmer being a very fober, religious Man; and having a Hint from me what to do, this poor Negro is become a very fentible, religious Fellow, has been baptized now two Years ago, and I think verily is an excellent Christian.

Sift. And did he run away, or claim his Freedom up-

on his being baptized?

Wid. No, not he; but I gave him his Freedom when his Master died, and gave him Wages, and he is an extraordinary Servant, I affure you.

Sift. Your Husband strained a Point of Religion there,

1 affure you.

he

No,

rna

onwill

ge-

nim

you

ea

Ca

told

v to

that

ight

han

vhat

do!

raid

e of

you

ould

rour

a did

I am

r ra-

t all,

are;

ot be

ould

legro

Pre-

Vork,

the

Wid. Why you see what Principle he did it from; he saw the Fellow was in a Protestant Country, and would either be a Protestant at last, or nothing at all; and he rather chose he should be a Protestant, than remain a Heathen, or lose all Desire of being a Christian; for, says he, God can enlighten him farther by a Miracle when he pleases; and the having been taught the general Notions of Religion, he would be the easier brought to embrace the true Church; but if he continues a Heathen, he will have no Knowledge at all.

Eld Sift. I believe you would not have shewn the

fame Charity for his Church.

Wid. I confess, I did not shew so much Zeal for the Soul of the poor Negro, as I think I ought to have done, or so much Charity as he did; but had other Thoughts at that Time to take me up: However, Sister, to bring this back to the first Discourse, you see by this how fatal in a Family, Disserence in Principles is within the same House; and had he not been by as d by an extraordinary Temper, as well as by an uncommon Charity, we had been the most miserable Couple on Earth: So that, in short, there is not one Part of a Woman's Life in such a Circumstance that is not dreadfully embarrass'd, if she has any Sense of her own Principles, or her Husband any Sense of his.

To. sist. But do you think then, that there may be a Case of some kind or other, in which a Man and a Wo-

may be happy together, tho' there be a Difference in

Opinions?

Wid. No indeed, I do not think there is: I do not think you can name a Case, in which it is possible to say with Truth, that they can be happy; that is, that there is not some Interruption to their Happiness on that very Account.

Yo. Sift. That is supposing them to be both religiously

inclined.

Wid. Nay, that need not be supposed; for we go upon our Mother's Principle, that without a religious Family there can be no Happiness of Life: If they are, as I said before, indifferent about Religion, then there is no Happiness at all in our Sense of Felicity; and if they place their Happiness in pursuing their Duty, as every true Christian must, there must be some of that Happiness wanting, where they cannot worship God together, and go Hand in Hand to Heaven.

Yo. Sift. You know, Sifter, I was always of that Mind; but I am exceedingly confirmed in it by your Experience.

wid. You were happy in your early cleaving to this Principle, and I miserable in neglecting it; may both our Examples be directing to those that come after us.

Fa. Come, Children, bleffed be God for the Experience of both: Let us end this Discourse, for it makes me melancholy, that have had a very unhappy Part in both your Cases: In yours, my Dear*, I violently endeavoured to force you to be miserable; and in yours, my Dear*, I entirely omitted the Concern I ought to have had upon me, to prevent your making yourself so.

sift. Do not afflict yourself, Sir, about that now; bles

fed be God we have both got it over.

Fa. But it does afflict me for all that; and let all Fathers learn from me, how much it concerns them, if they wish well to their Children, either to their Souls or Botl

A

in

e

ſe

fo

gi

^{*} Speaking to the Youngest † Speaking to the other.

dies, to establish religious Families in their Posterity, and to prevent their Children marrying, if possible, either where there is no Religion, or no Agreement in Opinion about it; for in either Case they are sure to be made misserable.

t

y

as nò

ry Di-

er,

ndi

his

erime

oth

our-

art,

pon

blef

Fa-

they

Bo.

The End of the Second Part.



THE

APPENDIX.

PART III.

N the latter Part of the last Discourse we left the Aunt and the Widow-Sifter, who had married the Roman Catholick Gentleman, entering upon a Discourse about the Inconveniencies of entertaining irreligious Servants; and also of entertaining of Servants of differing Persuasions and Opinions in Religion, one from another, or of differing Opinions from the Family they served in. The Ladies put off the Discourse of that Affair for another Time, the Aunt being willing to enter into a more particular Conversation about it. ed several very entertaining Discourses among them at several Times, some of which, I hope, may be useful to be made publick for the Direction of other Families, and for the Encouragement of all Masters or Mistresses of Families, who defire to promote good Government and religious Things among their Children and Servants; and particulariy

particularly in such a Time as this, when 'tis known that Servants are less apt to submit to Family-Regulations, and

good Houshold-Government than ever.

The two Ladies being at their Aunt's House, which was at Hampstead, as I have observed, their Aunt had a little Squabble with one of her Maids upon the following Occasion: The Maid had, it seems, been out in the Afternoon of a Sabbath day, and staid longer than the usual Time of being at Church; and her Lady, who otherwise had known nothing of it, happen'd unluckily for the Wench to be just in the Way when she came in; that is to say, the Lady chancing to go down the Back-stairs, which was not ordinary for her to do, meets her Maid dress in her best Cloaths, and just going up to undress herself; and this Rencounter between the Mistress and the Maid produced the following Dialogue.

DIALOGUE I.

Lady. HA! Mary, fays the Lady, not undrest yet!

Mary. I shall be ready presently, Madam.

Day? I suppose you are but just come in, Mary?

Ma. Yes, Madam, I have been come in a good while.

La. What do you call a good while, Mary?

Ma. A great while, Madam.

La. Must not I know how long, Mary?

Ma. Yes, Madam, if you please; but you don't use to inquire into such Trisles; I hope I have not been wanted.

La. It would have been a Trifle, Mary, if it had been of another Day; but it being on the Sabbath-day, Mary, makes the Case differ extremely: I hope you were at Church, Mary?

Ma. Yes, Madam, to be fure.

La. At our Church, Mary? I think I did not see you there.

Má. No, Madam, indeed I was not there; I hope tis

La. No, Mary, it is not all one, because I cannot be

fure that were at any Church at all.

Ma You may take my Word, Madam, for that for

once, I hope.

La. I cannot fay, Mary, that 'tis fo much to my Satisfaction to take your Word for it, as it would have been

to fee you at Church myfelf.

Ma. I am forry, Madam, you should be uneasy at those Things; I hope I do your Business to your Content; and as to going to Church, I hope I may be at Liberty to go to what Church-I like best,

La, Why, yes, Mary, I am willing to allow Liberty of Conscience, but then it is upon Condition that it is really a Conscientious Liberty; 'tis not my Question what Church you go to, if I am satisfied you were at Church at

all; but how shall I be fure of that, Mary?

Ma. 'Tis not worth your Enquiry, Madam; those Things are Trifles below a Mistress to trouble herself with.

La. No, Mary, you are much mistaken there; I think I am obliged to enquire whether my Servants go to Church, or no; and how they spend their Time o'Sabbath-days: Besides, Mary, 'tis a great while since Church was done, and I find you are but just come Home; I desire to have some little Account where you have been.

Ma. I am not ashamed to tell where I have been, Madam; I have been doing no Harm; I have been taking a Walk, Madam; I work hard enough all the Week; I

think I may take a little Pleasure o'Sundays.

La. Well, Mary, so you have been walking in the Fields, and taking your Pleasure To-day?

Ma. Yes, Madam; I hope there is no Offence in it;

I think you faid I have not been wanted.

La. Well, but just now you said you had been at Church,

Mary.

to

ed.

en

ry,

at

TOU

Ma. Why, that's true, Madam; I was at Highgate Church-door, but I did not go in, that's true; I did not think

think you would have troubled yourself to examine such

Trifles fo very particularly.

La. You and I differ very much about the Thing itself; I do not think 'tis a trifling Thing at all, Mary, whether my Servants spend the Sabbath-day at Church, or in taking their Pleasure.

Ma. I work very hard, Madam, all the Week.

La. What's that to keeping the Sabbath-day, Mary?
Ma. Why, Madam, fure I may take a little Pleasure
o'Sundays; I have no other Time; I am sure-you give
your Servants no Time for Diversion.

La. Did I ever refuse you, Mary, when you ask'd me

for a Day for yourself?

Ma: I never troubled you much with asking.

La. I had rather you had, Mary, than take God's Time for yourfelf.

Ma. God's Time, Madam; all our Time is God's

Time I think.

La. Yes, Mary; but some Time he has appointed for

Religion, Mary.

Ma. Religion! O dear! indeed, Madam, I don't trouble myfelf about Religion, not I.

La. So I find, Mary, and am forry for it.

Ma. O Madam, you have Religion enough for us all:

La. Don't make a Jest of it, Mary, I am not jesting

with you.

Ma. 1 think you are, Madam, when you talk to me of Religion; I don't understand it; what can I say to it?

La. You can go to Church, Mary, can't you?

Ma. Yes, Madam, fo I do fometimes.

1a. And don't you every Sunday?

Ma. No indeed, Madam, not I; 'tis a Folly to lie.

La. I am forry for it, Mary; I affure you, they that live with me shall go to Church every Sunday, or I shall not desire their Service.

Ma. You never made that Bargain, Madam, when you

hired me.

La. Well, Mary, then I make it now; for they shall not serve me all the Week, that make my Work an Excuse for not serving God on Sunday; I should think it would bring a Curse upon my Work, and upon my whole Family.

Ma. As you please for that, Madam.

La. No, Mary, it must be as you please, it seems, for you know my Conditions now, and I expect you will observe them, or remove.

[Here her Mistress left her, seeing she began to talk a little saucily, and she had no Mind to vex herself, or put her-

self in any Passion with her.]

The Wench, a little heated with the Reproof her Lady had given her, and vexed that she was caught, for she did not expect to see her Mistress on the Back-stairs, went up and undress'd herself, and hearing another of the Maids in the next Room, she goes to her, and there gives a full Vent to her Passion; railing heartily at her Mistress, and at Religion; and at every Thing that came in her Way. The following Discourse will give some Part of their Talk: She knocks at the Door, and calls to her Fellow-Servant thus: Betty, open the Door, I want to speak to you: So Betty, let her in, and she begins.

Ma. I suppose you have heard what a Lecture I have

had, han't you, Betty?

Betty. No, not I: Who have you had a Lecture from?

Ma. Nay, no-body, but my Mistress: I wonder what

Business she had upon the Back-stairs.

Bet. Back-stairs! Why did you meet my Mistress up-

on the Back-stairs?

of

at

all

ou

Ma. Ay, ay, I met her there; or rather she met me there, as ill Luck would have it; for I was but just come in, and was coming up to undress me, but she caught me; I would I had been a Mile off.

Bet. Why, what did she say to you? Was she angry?
Ma. Ay, ay, angry! I never had such a Rattle from
her since I came into the House.

Bet. What was the Matter? What was it for?

 Q_3

Mq.

Ma. For! For nothing, I think; but for footh the would needs know where I had been, and whether I had been at Church, or no: What has the to do with it, whether I go to Church or no? 'Tis nothing to her.

Bet. O that was only because you was but just come in, and it was so long past Church-time, I suppose, that made

her suspect you.

Ma. Suspect me! What do you mean by that? I do nothing to be suspected, not I.

Bet. I don't say you do; I say that made her suspect

you had not been at Church.

Ma. Well, she need not trouble her Head with her Suspicions of me; I told her I had not been at Church; I told her I had been taking a Walk with a Friend as far as Highgate.

Bet. Did you? That's more than I dare do; if I make a Slip now and then, I am in such a Hurry to get back just as Church is done, that it takes away the Pleasure of it.

Ma. I don't trouble my Head with it; if I have a Mind to take a Walk, as long as she don't want me, what need she trouble herself; I shan't be so much afraid of her, not I; as long as it is only o'Sunday, and my Work is done too.

Bet. But then I can affure you my Mistress and you will not agree long together; for it she knows it, she

won't keep you an Hour.

Ma. Nay, the may do as the will for that; I told her plainly where I went, and that I thought the had nothing to do with it.

Bet. Did you fo, Mary? Then I suppose she told you

her Mind.

Ma. Ay, ay, and I told her my Mind too; I won't be tied up to her religious Trumpery, not I; if I do her Work, what has she to do with what Religion I am of, or whether I have any Religion or no? 'Tis no Business of hers.

Bet. No, Mary, I cannot go that Length neither: I think my Mistress may concern herself with that; for if she is religious

religious herfelf, she may desire to have her Servants be fo too; and therefore if I do make a Breach sometimes, I always do it fo as not be found out; and I have fuch good

Luck, that my Mistress has never caught me yet.

Ma. Well, the has caught me; and if it be a fine Day next Sunday, the shall catch me again, if she has a mind to it : I won't be ty'd to go to Church but when I please ; I love Liberty: Besides this is about Religion, Betty, and fo 'tis Liberty of Conscience; you know I love Liberty of Conscience, Betty.

Bet. You are witty upon it, Mary: Pray what do you

call Liberty of Conscience?

7

of

k 18

Ma. What! That I should have Liberty to go to Church, or not go to Church, as I think fit, and when I please; is not that Liberty of Conscience?

Bet. No, Mary, I think that is Liberty without Conscience; for 'tis a Liberty in what we should not do; that

can never be Liberty of Conscience, Mary.

Ma. Well, well; then let it be Liberty without Conscience; 'tis the Liberty I love; and I fee no Harm in it: Why, you acknowledge you do so yourself, don't you?

Bet: That's true, so I do sometimes; but I cannot say tis as it should be; I cannot say as you do, that there is no Harm in it; 'tis a Fault, I know that; and I don't do it very often; and when I do, as I told you, I take care not to have it known.

Ma. Very well, then you are worse than I; for you believe it is a Fault, and yet do it : Now I don't think 'tis a Fault at all; if I did, it may be I would not do it.

Bet. I don't believe you can fay with a fafe Confcience that there is no Harm in it; you only are hardned a little more than I.

Ma. It may be so; and you are even with me, for you are a little more of a Hypocrite than I, and for aught I ice, that's all the Difference between us.

Bet. Truly, Mary, your Reproof is bitter; but perhaps, 'tis too true; and I shall learn so much from you, that

that I shall take more Care how I do again what my own Conscience convinces me is a Fault.

Ma. Well, and I may go on, because I have more Im-

pudence than you, I suppose that's what you mean.

Bet. I do not say so; I believe you know 'tis a Fault as well as I do, but you are a little more used to those things, it may be than I have been.

Ma. I am as I was bred, and so, it may be, are you; I was never taught to lay much Stress upon these Things,

and fo I never trouble myself about them.

Bet. Well, Mary, I am glad you think I have been taught better.

Ma. Why, as well as you have been taught, I find you can take a Walk in the Fields on Sunday as well as I.

Bet. But I tell you again, I don't do it, and think there's no Harm in it, as you do; and you have touched me so home with your Reproof, that I resolve never to do so again while I live.

Ma. But what's all this to my Mistress and me? What

has she to do with it?

Bet. Why, Mary, my Mistress is a very pious religious Lady, and she thinks herself bound to call her Servants to an Account how they spend their Time.

Ma. Ay, so she may for all the Week Days, for that's her Time; but Sunday is my own, she has nothing to do

with that.

Bet. I affure you my Mistress will not allow that Doctrine; she thinks she has as much to do with you on Sun-

day as any other Day.

Ma. You talk of my Mistress being a religious Lady, why so she may be, for aught I know; and I think we have so much Religion at home, we need not go abroad for it: Does not the Chaplain teize us twice a Day with his long Prayers, and reading of Chapters? I am sure he has made me neglect my Business many Times to come to Prayers: But I give them the Slip sometimes, and if I did not, they would have many a good Dish of Meat spoiled, so they would.

Bet.

ch

to

le

ed

to

aw

di

M

fa

to

no

tei

ile

an

Fi

Di

fal

of

Bet. You are a merry Girl, Mary, when you talk of

Religion.

Ma. Nay, I don't understand it; I know nothing of the Matter; I come to do my Business, and mind the Kitchen; if their Dinners are not well dished up, they may find Fault, and I should take some Care to mend it; but to talk to me about Religion, 'tis time enough hereaster, let them let me alone to myself.

Bet. But my Mistress will satisfy you that she is obliged, while she keeps you for a Servant, to see that you serve

God as well as you ferve her.

Ma. O dear! let them, serve God themselves better first; I don't see that any of them have any more Regard to their Prayers and their Chapters than I have that stay away, but only for form sake, and it may be for the Credit of employing a Chaplain.

Bet. Nay, do not fay so neither; I can assure you my Mistress is a very pious religious Lady, and you cannot say otherwise, I am sure; and so are all the young Ladies

too, they are like her.

Ma. It may be so; and yet I have seen them all asseep at Prayers many a Time, when I am sure they had not so much more Need to be sleepy than I had, that work hard, nor so much neither.

Bet. Sometimes they may be heavy, but that is not often; and I suppose you cannot say they were ever all a-

fleep together.

e

d

e

d

Ma. Tis no Matter for that, they do the same at Church; and pray what's the Difference between my going into the Fields to take my Pleasure on Sundays, and their going to Church to take their Ease? Between my washing my Dishes, while the Chaplain is at Prayers, and their being sast assessment as the Prayers?

Bet. Why, Most, thou art very malicious to take Notice of such Things, and they are Faults to be sure; but there

is a vast Difference in them too.

Ma. As how, pray?

Bet. Why thus: that the they may fometimes drop a-

fleep, 'tis not always; and they do it but feldom. You, it feems, make the other a Practice, and do it always: Then if they do fleep sometimes at Church or at Prayers, they don't pretend to say there is no Harm in it, they must acknowledge they ought not to do so; but you have the Impudence to say, when you spend your Time in the Fields, or perhaps worse, there is no Harm in it. Now there's a great deal of Difference between doing a Thing which they acknowledge to be wrong; and doing what is really wrong, and justifying it as if it was right.

Ma. Well, let them do what they will, and let me do what I will; I don't meddle with them, let them let me

alone, can't they?

Bet. But it may be, my Mistress thinks she ought to govern her Servants in religious Things, as well as in her House Affairs.

Ma. Why let her think what she will, and do what she will, I will have my own way, I shall mind nothing they fay to me.

Bet. That's none of my Business, Mary; you must do

as you will.

Ma. No; and it is none of her Business neither, I

Bet. I can't say that, Mary; I think if you were a Mistress, and kept a great many Servants, as our Mistress does, you would talk otherwise, and do otherwise too, or else you would soon have a House full of Whores and

Rogues.

Ma. I don't know what I would do then, nor do I trouble my Head with it; for I am never like to be tried with it: But if I was a House-keeper, and kept Maids, I would take Care they should do my Business, and that would keep them from making such a disorderly House as you speak of; as for their Religion, I should not trouble myself about it.

Eet. Well, but I would trouble myself about that too, I

affure you, if I were a Mistress.

Ma. Why, what would you do?

Bet.

up go vants would home

make would

you a your you four p

you if for the

game tor a

other have us the or Market

long

A

was but you

> like if you Med

1

Bet. Why, if I had a Chaplain or a Husband that kept up good Orders in his House, I would take Care my Servants should always attend at Prayers; and on Sundays I would take Care they should all go to Church, and come home again too when Church was done.

Ma You would! And if I was your Maid, you would make me come in to Prayers every Night and Morning,

would you?

Bet. Yes, I would, or you should not live with me.

Ma. Well, and if I did come in, I should only laugh at you all when I did, and make a Jest of your Chaplain or your Husband, and so would other Servants too: Don't you see we do so here? An't we always making Sport at our poor dull Thing call'd a Chaplain.

Bet. Yes, I can't fay but I fee it, but I never join with you in it; for I think there's no Jest at all in it: And as for the poor good Man himself, I know he sees it, and 'tis

a great Trouble and Discouragement to him-

Ma. Why, what is fuch a Fellow good for, but to be gamed and made Sport with? Does he think we take him

for any Thing but a religious Merry-Andrew?

Bet. You must think, however, my Mistress takes him otherwise, and thinks it her Duty to keep him, and to have good Orders in her House; and it does not become us that are Servants to mock at such Things: No Master or Mistress that knew their Servants mocked at God's Worship in their House, ought to keep those Servants an Hour longer in their Families.

Ma. And you would make me come to Church if I

Was your Cook, would you, Betty?

Bet. No, I don't say I would make you go to Church, but you should either go to God's Worship, or go about

your Business.

Ma. Well, but what if I were a Differer, and did not like your Way, or did not care to go to Church? Or what if you were a Differer, and I did not like to go to the Meeting-House?

Bet. Why truly, Mary, in gereral, I fay if that were

the

was fatisfied you went but somewhere; but your Dispute with my Mistress is between going somewhere and no where, not between serving God in this Manner or that Manner, but between serving God some Way or other, and serving him no Way at all; and that alters the Case

mightily.

Ma. But as to the Matter of coming to Prayers at home, it would be the same Thing; for if I were a Church-woman, and my Mistress a Dissenter; or I a Dissenter, and my Mistress a Roman Catholick; or my Mistress a Quaker, and my Mistress a Roman Catholick; or my Mistress a Quaker, and I a Roman Catholick, it would be all the same Thing; there would be the same Dislike and Contempt of what was done in the House; I should no more like the Crosses and the Masses of the Papists, the Yea and Nay of the Quakers, and the reading Prayers of the Church, or extempore Prayers of the Presbyterians, if I was of the other Opinion, than I like now any of them, while I declare I understand none of them, and so all their Family Doings would be but a Jest to me, and make a Jest of them.

Bet. Why, this is too true; and therefore I must own, that if I were Mistress of a House I would always have my Servants go to the same Place, to serve God, as I did my-self, or I would not keep them; whether I went to the Church, the Meeting-House; to the Quaker's Meeting, or

to the Mass-House,

Ma. And what would you be the better? They would but make a Jest of you still; they would be not the more of your Opinion for forcing them to go where you went.

Bet. You mittake me much; I mean, they should be such as by Choice went to worship so before they came to me, and that declared their Opinion to be so when I hired them: For otherwise, I grant, that compelling them afterwards would be nothing at all, or perhaps worse than the other.

ma. And what if an honest plain Wench like me came to be hired, that knows nothing at all of Religion, and troubled not herself about it?

Bet.

went to

her out

with you probate you acl should

Ma.
plaint
the wr

or prov

Ma.
you ha
fwered
that all

any whand the Bet.

be afra gion in stress

me; f the W after, Devil.

of us !

a Plac to Ch techif

Wheth

pet. Why, such a one, when I asked her whether she went to this or that Place, would say yes to any of them, as I happened to be myself, and so I might be deceived.

Ma. Well, and what would you do then, when you found her out, and met her on the Backstairs, Bess, as my Mi-

stress has done by me.

Bet. Why, I should do just as my Mistress has done with you, enquire about it, and when I found you a reprobate profane Wench, and a saucy one too, as it seems you acknowledge you have shewn yourself to-day; I should even give you Warning to mend your Manners, or provide yourself, as it seems my Mistress has done too.

Ma. A pretty Story! So I am come to make my Complaint to you to a fine Purpose; it seems you think me in

the wrong all the Way.

Ma. And what if I had come to you to be hired, and you had asked my Opinion about Religion, and I had answered you, that I had not had many Thoughts about it; that all Opinions were alike to me; that when I did go any where, I would go where you would have me go, and the like?

Bet. Why, Mary, I must own I should not like it at all; neither, I believe should I hire you at all; I should be afraid to take such a stupid Despiser of God and Religion into my House, you should even go without a Mi-

stress of me.

Ma. Well, and you might go without a Servant too of me; for I can tell you, there are Mistresses enough in the World that never ask the Question either before or after, nor care whether their Servants serve God or the Devil.

Bet. Ay, Mary, and that is one Reason why so many

of us Servants are of the same Kind.

Ma. Well, well, I don't doubt, however, but I shall get a Place among them, and not be questioned about going to Church: I go to Service to work, not to learn my Catechism; I understand my Cookery, what is it to them whether I understand Religion or no?

Bet.

Bet. Why, look you, Mary, I don't learn my Catechilm any more than you, and yet I do not like my Mistress the worse, I assure you, for taking Care that her Servants should go to Church, and not caring to keep those that are Despisers of Religion. I think 'tis Pity any Lady that is religious should not have religious Servants about her.

They had another Dialogue upon this Subject after wards: But it had too much Passion in it to merit a Place in this Account; for the Case was this: Betty gave her Lady an Account of some Part of Mary's Discourse, particularly that of making a Jest of her Chaplain, and of calling the Family to Prayers; upon which her Mistress turned her out of her House, giving her a Month's Wages instead of a Month's Warning, as one not fit to be allowed to stay in the Family; and Mary fell upon her Fellow Servant for that Part in a great Rage. Betty told her in fo many Words, the thought herfelf obliged to mention it, tho' it was not till her Mistress having heard that they had discoursed it together, made her promise to give her a full Account of all that had passed between them, and if she had not done it it faithfully, her Mistress would have put them both away together.

These two short Dialogues or Disputes about the Maid's rambling on the Sabbath-Day, was the Reason why the young Lady's Aunt was willing to discourse again with her Niece upon that Subject; and accordingly meeting together some Time after, they renewed their Discourse

about Servants in the following Manner.

Aunt. I think, Niece, when you and I talked last, we were upon the Subject of taking religious Servants; I want to hear what you have to say upon that Head; for I think there is really much more in it than most People imagine.

Niece. Truly, Madam, it is what I lay great Stress upon; and tho' I have not had much Occasion to complain in the few Years I have kept House, yet I have seen so much of it in my Mother's Time, and since that in other Families, Familian Shift I have a Person Scoffer

hard to among do not have a

anothe Aunable Fa

Nie

Nie lar Caf tice of Neight and ind

Nied temem dine w

Aun

Servan not mu

her W
ry Thi
Servan
Sort of
if you
to look

She every had a V

this Wo

Families, and a little in my own, that I am resolved what Shift I make I will have no Servants but such as, at least have a common Reverence for Religion, and for religious Persons in a Family. To be sure I will never have any Scoffers and Mockers of Religion, if I can help it.

Aunt. As the World goes now, Child, it will be very hard to find such; for Religion is so much made a Jest of among Masters, that it is hard to find any Servants that do not jest at it too, and mock and slight all those that

have any Regard to it.

Niece. That is my Case, Madam, exactly; but there is

another Mischief in it too.

Aunt. Another Mischief, Child! There are innumer-

able Family Mischiefs it it.

Niece. I believe fo, Madam. But this is one particular Cafe, and which I have the greater Reason to take Notice of, because a certain Lady, an Acquaintance and Neighbour of mine, has had a great deal of that kind; and indeed in a particular Manner with her Servants.

Aunt. What Lady is that! Pray do I know her?

Niece. You had some Discourse with her, Madam, if I temember right, the last Time you did me the Favour to dine with me.

Aunt. I remember it very well; and we talked a little upon that very Subject; I mean, how rude and infolent Servants were grown at this Time: But I think we had not much Talk of their being irreligious and profane.

Niece. Madam, she had a Servant, whom they called her Woman; for she was one to whom she entrusted every Thing, and who was like a House-keeper; and all the Servants were as it were under her: She was a very good Sort of a Body indeed in the House; and as that Lady, if you remember, was very lame, she could not stir about to look much after her Servants herself, and trusted all to this Woman.

She was a fensible Woman, had the Knowledge of almost every Thing in the World, and talked admirable well; had a World of Wit and Humour, very mannerly and well

behaved.

behaved, fober and modest enough; in short she was an excellent Servant.

Aunt. You give her an extraordinary Character, Niece,

do

2

ob

the

ver

der

him

fuch

Fam

with

N

that

than

marr

Warm

dy:

again

believ

the re

do it c

examin

Charge

Worth

the oth

for the

Truth

vants fo

ligioufly

Nied

Aug

Ni

Au

I affure you.

Niece. In a Word, Madam, she had every Thing about her, that could be desired in a Servant, but Religion; and of that she was as entirely empty as you can imagine it possible for any Creature in the World to be, and that had ever heard of God or Devil, or had lived among Christians.

Aunt. Nay, Niece, you say she was not an ignorant

Body.

Niece. No indeed, Madam, she was so far from being ignorant, that she was able to deceive any Body: She would talk of religious Things as wells and argue upon them strongly enough to delude any Body: And this made it the worse, for she was such a human Devil, that she made use of a sluent Tongue, and of an uncommon Wit, not to talk irreligiously only, but to mock and make a Jest of Religion in general, and of all those that had any Regard for it.

Aunt. She was a dangerous Body indeed! Pray was the a Maid or a Wife? For the is not very young, it

feems.

Niece. She had never been married, Madam, but I think was engaged to a Man whom my Spouse sent to ltaly: And they are to be married when he comes back.

Aunt. You fay she is a sober Woman?

Niece. Yes, Madam, I dare say she is. But her wicked, profane, and atheistical Behaviour is enough to poisson a whole Family.

Aunt. But why does the Lady your Friend entertain

fuch a one in her House.

Niece. She has fuch a Subtlety in her Conduct, and behaves so cunningly, that her Miltress does not perceive it; at least she does not think her so bad as she is.

Aunt. But what fays her Husband to it? Does he

know it?

Niece.

Niete. Yes, Madam, he knows more of it than the does; for the Men-Servants tell him of it, and give him a particular Account fometimes of Paffages which they observe.

Aunt. Perhaps he don't trouble himself about it : For

the Men do not often value these Things.

Niece. Indeed, Madam, just the contrary; for he is a very sober religious Gentleman, and keeps very good Order in his House, and 'tis a very great Disturbance of him.

Aunt. And has he spoken of it to his Wife?

Niece. Yes, Madam, he has very often, and told her fuch Particulars as are very effential to the Good of the Family; and fuch too as almost carry their own Evidence with them.

Aunt. And what does the fay?

Niece. I know not indeed how fhe manages; but I know that her Husband and she have had more Words about it, than about all other matters put together since they were married; and sometimes it grows high, and they are very warm and even angry about it.

Aunt. Why the feems to be a good sensible religious Lady: How can the take such a Creature's Part, especially

against her Husband?

Niece. Why, first of all she pretends that she does not believe it; that the other Servants rival her the Favours she receives, and her Mistress's particular Kindnesses, and do it out of a malicious Design: Then she says she has examined her, and finds she clears herself of much of the Charge, and makes the rest to appear trisling, and not worth Notice.

Aunt. But perhaps, Niece, it really may be so too, and the other Servants may make Things worse than they are,

for the Reasons you mention.

Niece, But, Madam, it is otherwise in fact; for the Truth is, this Wench or Woman, manages all the Servants so effectually, that, in short, if any of them are religiously inclined when they come; she makes them asham-

D

ed to be so when they come to her; for she makes a Mock of Religion, and fuch a Jest of going to Church, or going to Prayers in the Family, that the laughs them out of their Religion, and, in a Word, they all turn Reprobates like herfelf.

Aunt. But can this be, and her Lady not know or hear of it?

Niece. Yes, very well, Madam; for, as I told you, she is an excellent Servant, and the more her Mistress is loth. to part with her, the harder she is to believe these Things of her.

Aunt. But, Niece, her Husband, you fay, knows it; fure the will believe him.

Niece. But the alledges, he knows it but by Hear-fay from the rest of the Servants, who, she says, hate her, and therefore falfly accuse her.

Aunt. But does he know nothing from his own Know-

ledge?

Niece. Yes, Madam, he knows too much: for the unwary Creature let him over-hear her one Evening making her Jeers of, and flout at him to some of the Servants, but behind his Back, for his calling them all to Prayers; and not only fo, but at some Expressions which he had used some Time or other, which she pretended were Nonsense, and others trifling, and the like, as the Redundancy of her Wit gave her Room to banter.

Aunt. I hat was very unhappy indeed, and the worse

that he should know it too.

Niece. So it was, Madam; for it made the poor Gentleman decline performing his Duty for some Time, and made a very great Breach between him and his Lady, which is hardly quite made up yet.

Aunt. Why fo, pray?

Niece. Why, Madam, she wanted to have him continue to go on with his Duty, and to pray in the Family as he used to do: He declared he could not do it while that Creature was to be there; that it was a Restraint to him, and he could not perform when he knew there was one in

te

lig

ha

ha

the

be

it a

ret

lay

of

for

a S

fam

do :

mo

to t

Sna

at h

thin

did 1

. 1 Won

cious

lines

the Place who made a Scoff and Jeer at him for it. She alledged, he ought to perform his Duty for all that; and that it was a Piece of the Devil's Craft, contrived to interrupt the Worship of God in his Family, and that he ought to disregard it entirely.

dunt. Well, I think he was very much in the wrong in that Part, for he certainly ought not to have omitted his

Duty upon so mean an Objection as that.

Niece. That is true, and he owned it; but faid it was a Difficulty upon him, a Restraint to him in the Performance of his Duty, and that she ought to remove it from him.

Aunt. He ought to have consider'd, that the less of Religion was to be found in his Servants, the more Reason he had to pray for them, and with them; that he might perhaps be the Occasion of Good to them, and of bringing them to the Knowledge and Love of Religion, which would be an Advantage he ought to be thankful for, and think

it a Bleffing to his House if it happen'd so.

Niece. She did argue just so to him, Madam: But he return'd it so strong upon her, that she ought, as far as lay in her, to remove every Difficulty that lay in the Way of his Duty, that it was much more forcible as to her; for he told her, that if she granted, that the Difficulty was a Snare laid in his Way by the Devil, she ought at the same Time that she told him it was his Duty to resist it, do all she could possible, or that lay in her Power, to remove the Occasion; otherwise she made herself accessary to the Temptation, and affistant to the Devil, in laying a Snare for her Husband, and much of the Sin would lie at her Door.

Aunt. There was a great deal in that, I confess; and I think the ought to have yielded immediately. Pray, what

did she say to it?

Niece. She infifted, that the Charge was false; that her Woman deny'd it, and, as I said before, that it was a malicious Design of the other Servants; but in short, the Business was, that she was very loth to part with her Wo-

R 2 man,

man, who, as I faid before, was a very good Servant, and nifeful to her divers Ways.

Aunt. But you faid, that he heard fomething of it him-

felf. Surely the would believe him then,

Niece. Why, she could say nothing to that indeed; but she put it off as well as she could, with telling him she would tell her Woman of it, and take Care she should do so no more.

Aunt. That feem'd to be triffing, because it was in a Matter of such Consequence, as ought not to be trifled with.

Niece. It was so: But he went yet further; he entreated her, he begged of her to take away a Thing so irksome from him, and which was so much a Hindrance to his Duty: He told her, that had her Servant been a mere ignorant, untaught Creature, he should have had no Difficulty upon him, but rather it would be an Encouragement to do his Duty, in Hopes of being an Instrument of opening her Eyes: But for a Mocker at Religion, and one that not only despised Religion itself, but mocked at others for it; this made the Case differ exceedingly, and he knew not how to get over it.

Aunt. And would not fuch Arguments as those move

her?

Niece. Truly, not fo much as they should have done.

Aunt. And pray what was the Confequence of it?

Niece. Truly, Madam, the Consequences were bad many Ways. For, First, it kept the Lady and her Husband in very ill Terms with one another for near two Years: And, Secondly, That unhappy Creature bantered all the other Servants of the Family out of the little Religion they had, and indeed made them all like herself.

Aunt. And where did it end?

Niece. Why, Madam, besides this, it broke and put an End to all good Order, and to the Worship of God in the Family; I mean to all Family-Worship.

ount. What dreadful Work was that ? What! And does

it continue fo still?

Niece

re

ligi

at (

it, i

Th

to b

ject

Ser

Bufi

glori

lowe

narie

Pulpi Word

blaspl

Niece. No, Madam. Her Husband, who is a very religious Gentleman, could not content himself with living in that Manner with his Family, and not being able to prevail with his Wife to part with her Woman, he took so much upon him as to force her out of the House, that is to say, he put away the whole Set of Servants in the Family; for they were all made alike at last, and took all new People at once.

Aunt. And how did the Lady take it?

Niece. Truly, Madam, I cannot say she took it so well as I wish, for her Sake, she had: For the her Husband and she are very religious, sober and good People, yet I cannot but say, it has broken in very much upon their Tempers and Affection one to another, and there is not all the Harmony between them that there used to be.

Aunt. And all along of one graceless irreligious Ser-

vant.

Niece. 'Tis very true, Madam.

Aunt. Belides, as you fay, ruining the Morals of the rest of the Servants.

Niece. Yes, Madam.

Aunt. Pray how did that appear among them?

Niece. Why, Madam, in the first Place, she made all religious Things her Jest; turn'd all that was said to them at Church, or in the Family, that had any Thing ferious in it, into Banter and Ridicule, and laughed them out of every Thing that looked like Religion. She reprefented Religion to be a mere Piece of State-Policy and Priest-Craft, contrived between the Clergy and the Statesmen, only to subject the World to their Management. The Ministers and Servants of Jesus Christ set apart for the Altar, and whose Business it is to preach Salvation to a lost World, by a glorious but crucified Redeemer; the despised with the lowest or last Degree of Contempt, calling them Mercenaries and Tradesmen, the Church their Idol, and the Pulpit their Shop, where they fold what they called the Word of God to who bid most; and such like horrid and blasphemous Stuff. When the honest Servants would have

R 3

gone

gone to Church with their Master and Mistress, she would carry them away into the Fields, or to make some Visit or other, and continually turn them off from what was religious to something of Levity and Diversion, as a more suitable Work for the Sabbath-Day; and still when she had brought them to break in upon Conscience, and to profane the Sabbath-Day, she would fall foul of Religion for laying the Burden of Rules upon the Liberties of the World; and all she did or said was with a great deal of Wit, and by Way of Sarcasm, as sharp and as clean as if she had been a Philosopher, or a Doctor in Theology.

Aunt. She was the more dangerous.

Niece. She was so indeed, for she had a Tongue of a Siren; 'twas neatly hung, but hellishly employed, for she delighted in making every Body as bad as herself.

Aunt. Your Story is so very good, let me tell you a-

nother.

Niece. I should be glad to hear it, Madam. But if you please to put it off till by-and-by; for I see your * Ser-

vant waits to speak with you.

Aunt. She does so indeed: 'Tis to call us to Dinner, Well, we will talk again of this Part; for I am very much of your Opinion, Niece, about taking no profane irreligious Servants, if you can help it.



DIALOGUE II.

In the Evening, the Lady and her Niece taking a Walk in the Garden, had a farther Conversation upon the same Subject, and the Niece said to her Aunt, which began the Dialogue, Madam, when we left off our Discourse in the Morning, you were pleased to say, at the End of

re

ba

to

ca

G

hi

Ch

Bu

he

fob

Id

dou

and

Qui

I th

We A

Thi

a!ke

no S

A

^{*} She whispers her Maid.

my Story of an irreligious profane Wench, that my Neighbour Mrs.----had been troubled with, that you would

tell me a Story of another.

Aunt. I did so, Child: It is of a Family that lives at † that House, just over the Way, in the Back-lane. The People are Dissenters; the Gentlewoman is a very sober, religious, good Sort of a Person indeed; and her Husband is a very grave religious Man also. They endeavour to take Servants of their own Persuasion as much as they can; but that is sometimes very difficult to do; and she has indeed had very bad Luck that Way. However, this Gentlewoman, as she told me herself, having Occasion to hire a Maid-Servant, I forgot whether she was Cook or Chambermaid, or what else, for they kept three or four: But after she had agreed in every Thing else, she asked her Maid (that was to be) what Religion she was of?

Madam, fays the Maid, blushing (for she looked mighty sober) that is a Question I don't understand very well.

Why, fays the Mistress, I hope you are a Protestant?

I don't mean, whether you are a Papist or no.

Yes, Madam, fays the Maid, I think I am a Protestant. Nay, fays the Mistress, do you think so? but then, I doubt, you don't think much about it.

Not so much as I should do, Madam, says the Maid, and looked very simply and innocently at the Discourse.

Niece. Not expecting, it may be, to be asked such Questions.

Aunt. No, I believe not; for they are Questions that I think, none of us ask so much as we should do, when we hire Servants.

Niece. Servants value themselves so much now, that they would take it as out of the Way to be asked about these

Things.

Aunt. Well, if I have any Servants, they shall all be asked such Questions, and answer them too, or they shall be no Servants to me.

[†] She points to a House that could be feen over the Garden-Wall,

Niece. I am of the same Mind, Madam, if I can possi-

bly find Servants, that will fubmit to it.

dunt. Child, if they won't submit, before they are hired, to tell me what Religion they are of; what are they like to submit to (after they are hired) about Religion, or any Thing else?

Niece. Why, really Madam, I have had two or three that made a great deal of Difficulty to do it, and thought it very much out of the Way to have me ask them about it.

Aunt. And did you take them after that?

Niece. Why truly, yes, I did take two of them.

dunt. And were they good for any Thing when you

had them?

Niece. Indeed they were good for very little, I must confess, Junt. It may be possible indeed, that a Wench may be a good Servant, that is not a good Christian; but I must acknowledge it is but very seldom that it proves so; but when a good Servant is a good Christian too, such a one is ten Times the more valuable for a Servant, as well as

for her Religion.

Niece. It is true, Madam: But what shall we say, that some that are good Christians, are nevertheless not good Servants; nay, there is a kind of a Scandal upon those we call religious Servants, that they are generally saucy, referved, and value themselves too much upon it, always making Conditions with you, and claiming Times and Liberties on account of religious Affairs, which are neither proper sor the Work of Religion, and perhaps not employed so, when granted.

Aunt. That brings me back to the Story I was telling

you, at least to one Part of it.

Niece, I am forry I interrupted it then. Pray, Madam,

go on with it.

Junt. I told you, the Gentlewoman my Neighbour alked the Wench about her Religion, and how modefily she answered. However, her Mistress put an End to that kind of Discourse, and said, Look ye, Sweet-heart, I shall not catechise you too far; the Question is, whether you have

for l

Ni what

and for but the ple, for

to ge

Au

Answ Mistr

Ni not fa

Confe Neces in the Nie

fame (
Aun
Went t

on or

to, and

he wa Aun Mistre

you w

Yes, and fo have been bred to the Church, or the Meeting-House? for I tell you before-hand we are all Dissenters, and go to the Meeting.

Niece. That was too open, the might have first heard

what the Maid faid of herfelf,

Aunt. No, no; she was willing to let her know first, and see what Answer she would give to it, not doubting, but that it she gave an Answer not founded upon Principle, she should find it out.

Niece. Well, Madam, perhaps the would be any Thing

to get a good Place.

Aunt. As to that, the made herfelf Judge of it from her Answer, which was very honest indeed, the not to her Mistress's Satisfaction at all.

Niece. Why, Madam, if it was honest, why should it

not fatisfy her Mistress?

Junt. 'Twas an Answer which discovered the unhappy Consequences of divided Families, and shows much of the Necessity of what we have had so many Dialogues about, in the Case of yourself and your Sisters.

Niece. What about Husbands and Wives being of the

fame Opinion Madam?

Munt. Yes: She told her Mistress, that her Father went to the Meetings, and her Mother went to the Church.

Niece. What was that to the Question, of what Religi-

on or Opinion the was?

funt. Yes, my Dear, she ask'd her what she was bred

to, and it was a proper Answer.

Niece. That's true; and so between both, I suppose

the was bred to be indifferent to either.

Munt. No, my Dear, 'twas worse than that; and her Mistress took it immediately; for she turn'd pretty quick upon the Wench; and so Sweet-heart, says she, I suppose you were bred between them, and go neither to one or tother.

Yes, Madam, tays the Maid, fometimes I went to one, and fometimes to tother.

And sometimes to neither, fay the Mistress.

My Father and Mother were poor People, Madam, fays

Poor People! fays the Mistress, what then, Child? They might have carried you to serve God with them, one where or other; their Poverty did not hinder that.

That's true, Madam, pays the Maid, but they could

not agree about it.

Niece So, in short, the poor Girl was left between them without any Government or Instruction; I suppose that must be the Case: A sad Example of a Family, where the Husband goes one Way, and the Wife another.

Aunt. Ay, so it was: However she answered upon the whole, that she was very willing to go to the Meeting,

fince her Mistress defired it.

Niece. That was to fay, she was perfectly indifferent in the matter, and it would have been the same Thing to her, if her Mistress had been a Church Woman, or a Roman-Catholick, or a Jew, or any Thing or nothing.

Aunt. But her Mistress did not take it so; but seem'd satisfied, that she agreed to go to the Meeting, and so

took her into the House.

Niece, And pray, Madam, what came of it? how did

fhe prove?

ture would prove. She went with them to the Meeting, but pretended to the Servants she did not like it, and she had rather go to Church. So her Mistress taking an Opportunity of talking with her again one Day, told her what she had heard in the House of her, and asked her, if she had said, that she did not like going to the Meetings, but had rather go to Church; and she said, that indeed she did say so, but she meant nothing of Harm.

Weil, fays her Mistress, I never desire to offer Violence to any Servant's Conscience; if you had rather go to Church, you shall go to Church, tho' you know what you said to me, when I hired you, that you were very

willing to go to the Meeting.

That was very true, the faid, and the had not faid o-

Chur No I will God

therv

fpend Ther Mean think all Mo

Nice Nice Princi

and ge ciples Religio

little w twice if vants to at Chu her on suspect to the proving of her day no been su

She not fo, been at because ever, she he kne

ther an

therwise now; but she said only, that she had rather go to Church: However, if she pleased, she would stay at Home.

No, no, lays the Mistress, I'll have no staying at Home; I will have all my Servants go to the publick Worship of God somewhere; staying at Home may be as much misspending the Sabbath-day, as going abroad for Pleasure: Therefore go to Church, Betty, says her Mistress, by all Means; I am not so much against going to Church, as to think that they do not serve and worship God there. By all Means, if you do not care to go to the Meeting, go to Church; 'tis certainly your Duty to go somewhere, and mine to oblige you to it.

Niece. That was spoken like a Woman of very good

Principles.

Aunt. She is a very good fort of a Person, I assure you, and generally governs herself upon good Principles, Principles of Justice and of Charity, which is a great Part of Religion.

Niece. Well, pray what followed?

Aunt. Why she went to Church, as she said; but in a little while her Mistress began to suspect her, and once or twice she betrayed herself, and discovered among the Servants that she had been rambling about, but had not been at Church at all. Upon this Suspicion, her Mistress told her one Day very calmly, that she had some Reason to suspect, that her saying she had rather go to Church than to the Meeting, was not a sincere Dislike of one, or approving of one more than of the other, but really a Project of her own to have the Liberty of spending the Sabbathday no where; that is to say, in running about, as she had been suffered to do, when she was at Home with her Father and Mother.

She reply'd with some Considence, that indeed it was not so, and began to be more positive about her having been at Church than her Mistress desired she should be, because she knew she told her what was false. However, she run on, told her Mistress a Lie or two, which she knew to be so; and insisted that she desired to go to

Church,

Church, became she liked to serve God in that Way, better than the other: So her Mistress let it pass for that Time, and she went to Church as usual, that is so say,

went where the pleased for some Time.

At last she was trapp'd accidentally, and could not get off any manner of Way: for going rambling for her Pleasure, with some of the neighbouring Servants, Men and Maids together (for by this Time she had got a Gang like herself) and going to cross the Road about a Mile from the Town, a young Citizen that was spending the Sabbath-day on Horseback, as she was spending it on Foot, I mean in Pleasure, coming just up at that Minute, his Horse started at something, I know not at what, and giving a Spring forward, run against the poor Wench, beat her down, and threw him off a little farther, and hurt him too very much.

Niece. And what became of the poor Girl?

Aunt. Why, she was more frighted than any Thing else; but she had a Kick or Bruise by the Horse on her Knee, or the Horse trod on her Knee, she could not tell which: But by that Means she was lamed, and could not get Home till about eight o'Clock at Night, when her Mistress coming to the Knowledge of it, sent the Coach for her, and brought her Home.

Niece. Then there was a full Discovery indeed.

Aunt. Ay, so there was; for the Neighbours Servants that were with her, own'd where they had been, and with whom; and told honestly that they had been at a Cake-house to be merry.

Niece. It was no Crime perhaps in the Families where

they lived.

Aunt: No, none at all; or at least no Notice was taken of it, especially since they were only with Neighbours, and, as they called it, were in no bad Company.

Niece. But what did she do with her Maid?

Aunt. Why, her Maid was the same; she was forry for a while, and pretended she would never go abroad for Pleasure again on a Sabbath-day; But that held but a little

three her, a they ask'd last the would At least the M and ga

fhe spe Aun Place,

stay, and bef ur Niec

Way to foon as Aun flill, an clar'd

you did to Chu going t was bre because choose after th

bid I sh you ma Way; t like, 'ti

plain to cannot b little while; the was the same again a little while after; so her Mistress resolved to part with her, for she two or three Times enticed the other Servants to go abroad with her, and still when they had been miss'd, the Answer was, they went to Church with Betty; and then if Betty was ask'd she would lie very readily too, and say yes. At last this came out too, and Betty was called to an Account for it, and when she could deny it no longer, then she would own it, but promised to alter it, and do so no more. At length her Mistress, who was in a little Strait still, and loth to put any Force upon the Wench about going to the Meeting, told her she could not bear these Things, and gave her Warning.

Niece It was Time to part with her, when the found

the spoiled the rest of the Servants.

Aunt. Well, but the Wench, very loth to leave a good Place, came to her Mistress, and begg'd her to let her stay, and she would go to the Meeting, and then we should befure she did not ramble any more on the Sabbath-day.

Niece. So that 'twas plain she would serve God any Way for a good Place; and that was what I said of her as

foon as I heard her first Answer.

Aunt. But her Mistress acted upon another Principle fill, and the refus'd her: No, fays the, Betty, you declar'd in the house that you used to go to Church; that you did not like the Meetings, and that you had rather go to Church. Now, I will not have any body forced from going to Church to please me; if you had been one that was bred to go to the Meeting, I had been better pleafed. because I have been so brought up myself; but if you choose to go to Church, because you like to serve God after that Manner, better than in the Way I go, God forbid I should put any Force upon you. I doubt not, but you may ferve and worship God very acceptably either Way; but if you go to the Meeting, which you do not like, 'tis only to keep your Place which you do like, 'tis plain to me you will worship God no where; for you cannot be faid to worship God in a Way you do not like.

Niece.

Niete. She was too nice, I think, and talk'd to an ignorant Wretch in Language that she did not understand; she might e'en ha' let her gone any where; for 'twas plain she would serve God no where.

Nunt. Well, she acted on her own Principles however.

Aunt. Why, she made her a new Proposal. Look-ve. Betty, fays her Mistress, if you will go to Church honest ly, and fatisfy me that you do fo, and that you do not under a Pretence of going to Church, go abroad and fpend your Time idly, I shall be easy; for this was all the Reafon why at first I asked you where you went, and told you I expected you should go with me; not that I am against any body's going to Church, but because I defired they should serve God, and not ramble abroad. Betty promised heartily; ay, but, fays her Mistress, how shall I be satisfied of the Performance? Betty stood hard to have her Word to be taken for it; but that would not do, because the had broke her promise before, and had told some Lies too about the other Servants going to Church with her, as above. Well, Betty, Says ber Mistres, I'll put you in a Way to fatisfy me effectually: You know the Clerk of the Parish lives just by, and in your Way to the Church his Wife is a very fober good Woman, and I know never fails of going to Church, if she be well. Now, if you will go every Sunday with her, I'll answer for it, that if you are not there she will be true to me, and so kind to you as to tell me of it, and this shall fatisfy me.

Niece. If the Clerk's Wife was so faithful to be trusted, it was right, but that was a doubtful Thing; for she would be loth, I reckon, to ruin the poor Wench for fails

ing now and then.

Betty still; an ill Habit and Want of Principle led her away; she seldom came to Church, and the Clerk's Wise would lie for her, and so at last her Mistress turned her away; and thus I think all Servants, Men and Maids, should be served, would the Masters and Mistresses de their

their vants than

ferve a reli make

Au the fa that was b the w her w go to confe fuch (ty; a very | that f really little ! wicke Mout Ni

Ser var Was a be at fatisfie rious

Mind

Aun that the that the God in

their Duty: And if this was univerfally practifed, Servants would ferve God and their Mistresses too, better than they do.

Niece. They would so indeed, and for want of it, they serve neither God nor their Mistresses. 'Tis a Want of a religious Regard to the well-ordering of Servants that

makes them as they are.

Aunt. Well, but I have another Story to tell you, of the same Gentlewoman; for after this she took a Servant that the thought must necessarily be religious; for the was bred to the Meetings from her Infancy: But it feems the was not of the same fort as her Miltress; but she told her where she used to go, and capitulated for Liberty to go to the fame Meeting still. This her Mistress readily consented to, not doubting, but that one, that was under fuch Obligations, would certainly be careful to do her Duty; and when the mentioned to the Maid that the was very ready to yield to her going where she said she went, that the only defired to be fatisfied that her Servants did really go where they faid they went; the Maid scemed a little furprized, that she should be thought capable of so wicked a Thing as that, and so stopped her Mistres's Mouth with her Character.

Niece. Well, Madam, then I hope she had one to her

Mind.

Servant, who was a very religious devout Fellow, and he was a Churchman. He truly conditioned, that he would be at Liberty to go to Church, which upon their being satisfied that he was really a well-meaning, sober, and serious Fellow, they easily consented to.

Niece. I thought you faid they infifted on their Ser-

vants going to worship God where they did.

that they might be fure to have orderly Servants; and that they did observe the Lord's-Day, and worshipped God in some Place or other, not misspending the Sabbath; otherwise

otherwise they were Persons of a large Charity, and of a true Christian Temper to those from whom they differ'd.

Niece. Well, but to return to their Servants, how did

they prove for a notion dation of

Aunt. Only the worst that ever were heard of.

Niece, What both of them?

Aunt. Ay, ay, both, of them. The Wench was faucy, figid, centerious; took upon her to find fault, that her Master and Mistress, who were chearful and good temper'd People, were not serious enough: she would not come into their Family-worship, because she said, 'tis sortily perform'd, and she did not like it: When her Mistress entertained any Friends, she did not like it, 'twas wicked, and it was loose and extravagant, and had too much Luxury in it, and the like.

Niece She should have been Miltress, and not Maid.

fi

b

kı

to

on

the

fho

ed

ers

Aunt Her Mistress told her so indeed one Day when over-hearing some of her Talk by Accident, she call'd her to her, and speaking something angrily to her, Jane, says she, answer me one Question: What did I hire you for? Jane was a little surprized at first, not understanding the Question, and said nothing; till her Mistress repeated the Question by way of Explanation thus, Jane, Pray did I hire you to do my Work and to be my Servant?

Yes, Madam, fays Jane.

Well then, fays her Mistress, pray do your Business, and behave like a Servant, as becomes you, or remove and provide yourself; and when I want a School-mistress to teach me how to behave in my Family, I'll fend for you.

Niece. That was right; that was acting like a Mistress;

pray, what faid Jane to it?

Junt. She was confounded, and struck dumb at first, but her Mistress explain'd it to her afterwards.

Nices But pray what was she for a Servant?

Aunt. O! A most extraordinary accomplished Slattern, and a surly, heavy, unmannerly Creature, that look'd always as if she thought herself fitter to be Mikress, than her that was so; did every Thing with Reluctance, aukward and disrespectful, and yet wilful, and above being taught, dull to the last Degree, but scorn'd Reproof.

Niece Certainly she had more of the Pretence to Religion than of the Reality; for Christianity teaches us to fill up every Relative Duty with equal Exactness, and

with a fuitable Diligence and Application.

Aunt. Why, to bring my Story to a Point, she had the Out-side of Religion only: Whether she took it up with a Design to deceive, or whether she deceived herself, and fell from what she at first profess'd, I know not; but she fell quite off from Religion itself at last; and adding to that some Follies, which I choose to say nothing of, my good Neighbour turn'd her off, and got rid of her.

Niece. There the was cheated in her own Way.

Aunt. She was so, and I told her of it; but she answer'd me with a Saying which I have often made use of before, and that with relation to myself; I am never, said she, in so much Danger to be cheated, as when People pretend to be religious; for then I think they dare not do such Things as I am afraid of.

[Here the second Sister came into the Room, and finding what Discourse they were engag'd in, after her Respects paid to her Aunt, and to her Sister, she desir'd they would go on with their Discourse, for that she knew the Subject, and it was what she came on purpose

to have a Share in.

Aunt. I was telling your Sister how a Lady of my Acquaintance was cheated with two religious Servants.

Sec. Niece. I heard the last Part; and she was a nice

one indeed.

Aunt. O! I have not told you half of her Behaviour.--- Sec. Niece. Well, but, Madam, how did it fare with

the Man Servant; how did he behave?

Aunt. Why, every Jot as ill another Way: When he should be at Hand to be call'd, and when his Master wanted him on any Occasion, he was gone to Church to Prayers; and when Prayers were done, he would often fall

S

in, as he came home, at a certain Ale-house that unhappily stood in the Way home, and I think, once or twice came home drunk.

Sec. Niece. Fine Things indeed for a conscientious

Wretch! These were religious Servants it seems.

Junt. Hold, Niece! Religion, no, nor any Profession or Opinion in Religion is not altered one Way or other, by the Mistakes and Miscarriages of those that make a Profession of it. The eleven blessed Apostles were not at all the worse, or is the Memory of them to be the less reverenced, for the twelfth being a Devil; nor must we expect that all our Servants shall be Saints, when they are what we call religious; All People have Failings, Religion does not always change natural Tempers.

Sec. Niece. But we should expect they should be Christians, and Servants too. Religion never takes away good Manners, or privileges Servants from observing the due Space which Nature has put between the Person to be

ferved, and the Person serving.

Fir. Niece. The great Thing I insist upon taking religious Servants for, is, that they may be Examples in a Family, of Sobriety, quiet Submission, Diligence and Seriousness, to their Fellow-Servants; that they be Encouragers, not Hinderers of God's Worship in the House; that the whole Family may chearfully unite in serving God, and in all religious Rules and Orders; that if an ignorant and untaught Creature is taken into the House, they may be instructed and led by the Hand into the proper Duties of a Christian; that all the House may be a Class of Christians, doing their Duty in their respective Places, both from a Principle of Justice and of Charity.

Aunt. But 'tis very rare, Niece, to find what you speak

of.

Fir. Niece It is fo, Madam: But then, fince it is not probable we should always find such, all that I insist on in the mean Time is, that we should take Care, as near as possible, to take those that are well inclin'd, and well educated: Not Enemies to all Religion, not such as make

a Mock

fhe

tha Re

ten

a J

Wa

her

fhe all,

with

ligio

by t

a Mock of worshipping their Maker, or observing his Rules; such I would not entertain at all, on any Account whatsoever; they would be a continual Offence in a sober Family.

Sec. Niece. But there are some that may be in the middle Way, no Enemies to Religion, not Mockers at all sober Things, and yet not much stor'd with serious Thoughts,

not void of Principle, nor void of Modesty.

Aunt. Why, it is true, there are some such, and I know not what to say to such, I would rather have them than the other.

Fir. Niece. I like those but a little better, I would have

neither of them, if I could help it.

Aunt It is true, that they always discover a Coldness and Backwardness to every good Thing, and secretly despise the most serious Things as well as the other: But good Manners restrains them a little from insulting the Family. I do not like such, I confess.

Sec. Niece. But they may be better born with, Madam,

than the first Sort

Aunt. Well, but your Sister here is so far from approving that Sort, that even, if they were seriously religious, she would not entertain them, if they were of a different Opinion; she is of the same Notion with my Cook-Maid that I told you the Story of, that all differing Opinions in Religion, will, in such Creatures as these, despite and contemn those that differ from them, and either hate or make a Jest of one another.

Sec. Niece. My Sister, it may be is grown rigid that Way, from the Disaster of the Family, with respect to her Husband and herself: But in carrying it so far, then, she will make it almost impossible to have any Servants at

all, but fuch as we bring up ourselves.

Fir. Niece. It is no Matter for that, I am positive in it, with respect to a Family's Peace, and the Harmony of Religious Worship in any Family, it is all destroy'd and lost by these little Difficulties: As long as there are Servants to be had, and I could pay Wages, I would change 500 Servants.

Servants, till I found one to my Purpose; nor should any Fitness for my Business, or any Goodness of Humour in a Servant, prevail with me to keep her, if she wanted the main Article of Religion, and the same Opinion of Religion too with my own.

Aunt, I am afraid, Child, you would change 500 in-

deed then, before you would be fitted.

Fir. Niece. Why, Madam, I hope, I am not of fuch strange Principles and Opinions, that nobody can be found of those Opinions but me.

Aunt. No, my Dear; but Servants have rarely any

Notions of those Things, or enter far into them.

Fir. Niece. Well, Madam, I would venture it, for I would no more entertain those who differ'd from my Opinion in Religion, than I would entertain those that had none at all; for the Difference in Opinion in Servants, has more Mischiefs in it sometimes, than the other.

Aunt. I grant it would be very well to have Servants of the same Opinion in Religion with ourselves, but it cannot be always so; the first and main Point that I have made my Rule, has been, to have Servants that are religiously inclin'd in general, and that are willing to be instructed; these, having a modest sober Behaviour in the main, are more easily brought to comply with religious Things in the Family, whether they are the same Way that they were first inclin'd to, or not; such as these are often brought, by good Examples in the House, to be of the same Opinion with ourselves.

Sec. Niece. Such are indeed a great Tye upon Masters and Mistresses of Families to take Care that we recommend the Profession we make of Religion by a good Example; for Servants are not likely to turn to our Opinion, or embrace with us the Part which we take in Religion, when they see us not practising the Things we pretend to teach, and not winning them to our Opinion by a Conversation

becoming Religion.

Aunt. It is very true, Niece; and would Masters and Mistresses keep upon their Minds a Sense of what Influ-

ence

lig

no be

his

fro

fro

no fusi

pro feer

relig

poor

Serv

ence their Conduct may have upon their Servants; how they may be the Means of bringing them to a ferious embracing of Religion, or to a greater Levity and Indifference, than it may be they had before, as they fee a good or ill Example in those they serve, we should have much better Masters and Mistresses than we have, and more religious Servants too.

Fir. Niece. That's very true, and it were to be wish'd it were well observed. But since it is not always so, I cannot reconcile it to common Reasoning, that we should take Servants of any Principles or Opinion of Religion,

but fuch as we profess ourselves.

Aunt. If it can be avoided.

Fir. Niece. Certainly it may be avoided if we will.

Sec. Niece. You would except such as, being ignorant and untaught, profess themselves willing to come into religious Families that they may be guided into good Things by Teaching and Example.

Fir. Niece. Yes, I do except fuch: For fuch are to be moulded this Way or that, as Providence casts them into

religious or irreligious Families.

Aunt. We agree in that Part exactly; and indeed, were I to choose, I would rather take a Servant, who being ignorant in religious Matters, was yet sober and willing to be instructed: I say, much rather than take one fixt in his or her religious Opinion, and that Opinion differing

from my own,

n

n

Fir. Niece. Indeed, Madam, I am positive in that Point; I cannot go from it: I would not take one that differed from me in Opinion in Religion by any Means; no, upon no Account at all; it is attended with nothing but Confusion in the Family: I would almost as soon take a loose profane Wench, that own'd no Religion at all: I have seen so much of it, and sound such Inconveniences in having religious Quarrels and Differences in the Family by it, that I think 'tis unsufferable: I told you the Story of our poor Negro, that would turn Christian: We had one Servant a Papist, and he would have the Boy a Roman S 2

Catholick; another would have him be a Church of England Protestant, and another would have had him been a Presbyterian: 'T was a Reproach even to the Name of Christian, to hear how one told him he would be damn'd if he was this: another told him he would be damn'd if he was that; and the other told him he would be damn'd if he was either of them, and so of the rest; so that the poor Boy was almost distracted among them, as I told you at large before.

Aunt. Without entering into Examples, I grant 'tis very pernicious, and a great Obstruction to Family-Religi-

on, and that many Ways.

Sec. Niece. Were there a Spirit of Peace and Charity always to be found, where there was an outward Appearance of Religion, it would be quite otherwise; but that is not our Case, in this Age. You see, Madam, what was the Case in your Neighbour's Family, where the religious Servants, I mean appearingly religious, were the worst Servants, and the worst Christians, they could have met with.

Aunt. I did not bring those Examples to lessen the Value of good, serious, religious Servants; but to hint to you the Danger there is (among those that call themselves such) to find Hypocrites, and also to note, that Religion does not always make a good Servant.

Niece It ought to do fo, and would do fo, if the Rules

of Christianity were faithfully observed.

Aunt. But it is not always so, and therefore, as I say I would not take a Servant that was not religious or religiously inclined; so I do not say, that I would not for the Sake of their being serious and religiously inclined take a bad Servant; for Religion does not always qualify a Servant.

Sec. Niece. No, Madam, Religion does not make them good-humoured, cleanly, active, diligent and mannerly, and the like; it will make them faithful and honest, that is inseparable, but there is many a good Christian that makes a bad Servant.

Aunt.

tı

th

Aunt. But I know some of them expect we should bear with all the rest, for what they call religious.

Fir. Niece. And perhaps are not so at bottom neither.

Aunt. Nay, that Sort of them are generally otherwise,
and put on an Appearance of Religion only to disguise
themselves the more dextrously, and these are the religious Servants that I am aptest to be deceived by; but
there are some of the other too.

Sec. Niece. 'Tis one of the worst Parts of a Hypocrite, I think, when they study to cover a vicious Life with the

Mask of Religion.

Aunt. But I think too, that it is soonest discovered.

Sec. Niece. It may indeed be sooner discovered than other Disguises, because the Levity is apt to break out at proper Intervals, in spite of the utmost Caution: But the Mischief is often done first, when the Discovery is too late to prevent it; and therefore upon the whole, there is a great Risque in taking Servants, that we are not very well assured of, one Way or other

Fir. Niece. But I hope you do not argue for being in-

different in the Case.

Sec. Niece. No, no, very far from it; but I own, 'tis

a critical Cafe.

Fir. Niece. Let it be as critical as it will, 'tis absolutely necessary to be taken care of, if we will have religious Servants. 'Tis a sad Thing to have the Master and Mistress praying in one Part of the House, and the Men and Maids swearing or railing, or laughing or jeering in another Part of it. Next to having the Master and Mistress religious, it is essential to a religious Family, to have the Servants religious too.

Sec. Niece. If it be possible to find such.

Fir. Niece. They must be found religious, or be made fo.

Sec. Niece. 'Tis but coarfe Work to new-mould a Servant: As you find them, you have them generally. Most

of the Servants of this Age are uncapable enough to be meddled with. I mean as to Instruction.

that I have had a loofe, wicked, irreligious Servant or two, who by taking some Pains with them, have been brought to be very serious and very religious.

Sec. Niece Then they have thanked God for your

bettering them by your Instruction.

Aunt. So they have, I affure you, Niece.

Fir. Niece. But they were originally of a docible tractable Temper then, which is very rare among Servants. But, Madam, allow you could take that Task upon you, and your Application had Success, you would not expect that every Mistress like you, should set up for an Instructor of their Servants.

Aunt. No, no; but it is not so hopeless a Thing, however, as you may imagine: For if a Girl has any Modesty, she cannot but listen a little to the Instruction of those that wish her so well, and that have so little Obligation upon them to do it.

Fir. Niece. Why, Madam, an untaught Wench, that is modest and willing to be instructed, I take, as I said before, to be among the Number that are fit to be taken: The very Example of a religious Family will make her

religious alfo.

Aunt. My Dear, you touch us all there, and that upon a nice Point too; it must be confessed that it is because there are so few religious Families, that there are so few religious Servants.

Hand, loose, prosane, irreligious Servants are a great Hindrance to the setting up religious Families. Those I am

utterly against.

Aunt. And that is the Reason, Child, that I say, they

should not be taken into our Families.

Fir. Niece. And should be turned out again as soon as discovered, and that without any Certificate given them

of t

the

bein Sabl to g

Cafe

but ing

der

und cant we both Hin ous

on, wou not

V

done our we

let is on in God flour felve

of their good Behaviour, or without giving them what we call a good Character.

Aunt. We cannot deny them a Certificate, Child, when they have not wronged or robbed us, the Law requires

that of us.

Fir. Niece. But then, Madam, the Certificate should mention that I dismiss such a Man, or such a Maid, for being a prosane, irreligious Person, or for breaking the Sabbath-day, or for not going to Church, when ordered to go there, or for going abroad to be merry, when they should have been at Church, and such like, as the Case may happen to be.

Aunt. I own there is a great deal of Reason to do so; but we are apt to think it hard to do so, and that it is tak-

ing a poor Servant's Livelihood from them.

Fir. Niece. But we should consider too, how much harder it is to push a profligate Wretch into a sober Family, under the Recommendation of a salse Character. We cannot say we do Justice to our Neighbour, or to do as we would be done by: For still I go back to what we both said before, that irreligious Servants are a great Hindrance to Masters and Mistresses in setting up religious Rules and Exercises in their Families.

Aunt. Ay, and a great Discouragement in carrying them on, when they are set up; and for both those Reasons, I would advise all my Friends to take no Servants that had

not some Sense of Religion upon them.

Sec. Niece. I join heartily with my Sister in her Opinion, if such Servants can be had; but what then must be done when we get irreligious and protane Creatures into our Houses, and cannot help it; or find them so, when

we expected the contrary?

Aunt. No! my Dear! the Case is plain; we must not let Servants laugh us out of our Religion: We must go on in the Way of our Duty, and set up the Worship of God in the House; and as often as we find the Servants shout at it, or contemn it, return the Contempt upon themselves, and turn them out, but go on to perform the Duty:

Turn

Turn them all away that pretend to behave irreverently, or pretend to mock or fcoff at it; I fay, turn them all away, and let it be the standing known Rule in the Family, that all the Servants that come, may hear of it as soon as they converse in the House; then they will know what they have to trust to, and will behave accordingly. 'Tis omitting our Duty in our Families, not our performing it, that makes Servants mock. When they see us religious to-day, and wicked to-morrow, they may well scoff; but where serious Religion is steadily maintained in a Family, it commands that Awe and Reverence of Servants, that they grow religious of course. Thus one good Family breeds good Servants for another, and the good Examples of a sober Family, make the Servants all sober.

Sec. Niece. I acknowledge all that: But I have not practifed that Part indeed, of turning them away for their irreligious profane Carriage when discovered. I have endeavoured to get religious Servants; but when I have found them otherwise, I have not turned them off, which

indeed I should have done.

Junt. So far you are wrong, my Dear; for why not put away a Coachman or Chambermaid as well for being wicked as idle, for being an Offender against Heaven, as well as for being an Offender against ourselves? I think the Reasoning is every way as good.

Sec. Niece It may hold in many Cafes.

Aunt. Indeed, Niece, I think it will hold in all Cases; and I can give you some Instances, where Servants knowing it before, have behaved much the better on that Account: But 'tis late now, we will talk of that Part another Time.

The End of the Second Dialogue,

bo

an

of

to

lov

of

go

the

Inj

Ge

Wh

ing

don

but

Rife

exp

I di

und

qua



DIALOGUE III.

A Few Days after this Lady and her two Nieces had discoursed this Point about Servants, the Aunt and both her Nieces, that is to say, the eldest of the Sisters and the Widow, had another Dialogue upon the Subject of giving a Character to Servants, and the Justice that was to be done in it on one Side, and on the other, on the following Occasion.

The eldest Sister had taken a very scoundrel idle Jade of a Servant, and that too after having received a very good Character of her from a Gentlewoman with whom she had lived before; and she complained heavily of the Injustice of it, and that she had been abused by the said Gentlewoman, and was telling her Tale to her Aunt, which introduced the following Dialogue.

Aunt. I find, Child, you lay all the Fault of your being disappointed upon the Wench's former Mittress; you don't seem to say the Maid herself has deceived you.

First Niece. Indeed, Madam, I am deceived both Ways;

but I blame the Maid's former Mittress most.

Aunt. Why fo? Did not the Maid pretend to be other-

wife than you find her?

First Niece. Yes, Madam, that is true; but I did not expect so much from a Maid, when she came to be hired; I did not expect she would tell her own Faults.

Aunt. Well, but on the other Hand, you did not expect the should tell you she was able to do what she did not understand, or should undertake what she was no ways qualified to perform.

First

First Niece. No that's true, Madam: But the was will-

ing to get into a good Place.

Aunt. And to do it, she must be allowed to introduce herself by a Parcel of Lies and Shams, and pretend to be what she has no Pretence to; I think that as bad as

any of the rest.

Sec. Niece, I join with my Aunt in that Part. I think the Law should have provided some Punishment for Servants, that give themselves Characters they do not deferve, as well as for other Pieces of Dishonesty; for, in short, it is a downright Fraud, a Cheat, and a Piece of Dishonesty intolerable. For Example, a Cook comes and hires herfelf to me, to ferve as fuch; and when she has undertaken the Business, it appears she understands nothing of Cookery, and has never been any Thing but a middle Maid, to wash and scrub the Rooms, and the like: Or a Chambermaid offers herfelf, and tells me, she knows how to make Mantuas, cut Hair, clear-starch, and the like; and when it comes to the Trial, acknowledges the does not understand any of them, or only this, and not that, as it happens: Why should not this Maid be punished, as well as the that, pretending to be honest, proves a Thief?

Aunt. No, Child; she does deserve to be ill used: But the Case differs as to a Thief; for she is punished not for pretending Honesty, and deceiving me in the Character, but for her actual Thest and robbing me of my Goods.

Sec. Niece. Well, Madam, then the Punishment should differ too. I do not say she should be hanged, but I think she should be punished however some Way or other.

First Niece. We have Ways to punish such a Servant, and all Servants too, if all Mistresses would be just to themselves, and to one another. We might make up the Desiciency of the Law in that Case to ourselves very easily, and the want of doing ourselves Justice is the Thing I complain of.

Aunt. How would you make it up?

First Niece. Why, Madam, whenever any such Servant came to me, I would be sure to turn her away again, with

all

all

wl

I١

the

boi

all

ma

we

var

for

Br

bre

and

the

the

har

cau

niff

be

Sift

but

Ob

to I

and

to

But

blig

to I

IS C

Lav

all the Refentment that her Behaviour required; and when the fent any future Miltress to me for a Character, I would do her Justice.

Sec. Niece. You should say, Sister, that you would do the Gentlewoman Justice, who came to enquire of you a-

bout her.

Aunt. Why truly, you put it right there, Niece.

Sec. Niece. Indeed, Madam, that is the Foundation of all the Grievances we are under about Servants, that we make no Conscience of doing one another Justice, when we make Enquiries after the Character of another's Servant.

First Niece. Why, we are loth to hinder poor Servants; for to take away their Characters, is to take away their

Bread.

Sec. Niete. We may say the same of a Thief or a House-breaker, when we find them in our Houses or Gardens, and take them even in the very Fact: We are loth to ruin them for it; that it was Necessity forced them to do what they did; and if we have them committed, they will be hanged or transported; nay, the Argument is stronger, because the Injury done may have been trisling, and the Punishment there is Loss of Life, which we may be loth to be concerned in.

First Niece. You carry the Case a great deal too high,

Sister; I cannot think they are alike.

Sec. Niece. Truly, Sister, I think 'tis much the same;

but of the two I take here is the greater Obligation.

Obligation is this: If I take the Thief, and give him up to the Law, he is undone, and his Life must pay for it; and 'tis a sad Thing for me to let a poor Fellow be put to Death, or transported, for robbing me of a Trisse. But, on the other Hand, I am to consider, (1.) I am obliged by the Law to do it; that it is not I that put him to Death, but the Laws of his Country, and his own Crime is the Cause of it; and I am an Offender against that very Law, and in some Sense a Confederate with him, at least

an Encourager of him in his Crime, if I omit it: But which is more than that, (2.) By my perhaps unfeafonable, and indeed unjust Compassion, I become accessary to all the Robberies he shall be guilty of after it; because if I had done as the Law directed me, I had put him out of a Condition to rob or injure any other Person.

Sec Niece. You have fully explained my Meaning, Madam, and I take the Cafe to be the same; I by no Means do as I ought, or as the Law directs, if when my Neighbour taking a Servant after me, and coming to me for a Character of her, I decline speaking the Truth of her,

ay, and the whole Truth too.

First Niece. Then no Servant would get a Place, as Servants are now.

Aunt. Then, Niece, they would be more humble, and careful how they behave.

First Niece. It is a nice Case, and we ought to take a

great Care then, that we do not injure them.

Sec. Niece. That's true we ought to do them no Wrong; but we do the Person that is to take them an irreparable Wrong, if we recommend an ill Servant to them.

dunt. Nay we break another Law that you have not thought of yet; for we do not do in it as we would be

done by, which is the great Christian Rule.

Sec. Niece. Not only so, Madam, but we do as we would be done by; for would any of us, if we go to enquire of a Servant, be told she was honest, when she was a Thies? That she was neat, when she was nasty; tight when she was a Slattern; diligent, when she was idle; quiet, when she was faucy; and modest, when she was, it may be, a bold Hussey? and the like?

Aunt. I observe, indeed, there is a general Backwardness in People whenever we go to enquire about a Servant. A Mistress cannot be said to recommend earnestly,
because it is to be granted that she parted with the Servant for something or other. But she is therefore, on the
other Hand, shy and backward, and will say nothing, or
but little of the real Character of the Servant, because,

in fu Sa as to be S to b now. F as it vants to ou Sa for i the

forf

I wo

I did

Mift

At them

fired

Servi haps anoth migh

S

Sifte

or the Namin ca

went who

ded

for-

forfooth, she would not hinder her a Place; and indeed I would be very loth myself to ruin a poor Girl, because I did not like her; but I do think, as you say, Niece, we Mistresses are too backward to be free with one another in such Cases.

Sec. Nièce. It would not only answer the End, Madam, as to the Law-part, but it would bring Servants back to be Servants again, as they used to be, and as they ought to be; for really, they can hardly be called Servants

now.

First Niece. I wish it was with us in case of our Maids, as it is with the Gentlemen in the case of their Men-Servants. viz That we should be obliged to give Certificates to our Maids when they went away.

Sec. Niece. Why even then the Case would be the same; for if the Form of the Certificate was not settled too by the Act of Parliament, we should sign any Thing they de-

fired us.

t

1

f

e

n d

-1

Y .

1-1

e

7

e,

First Niece. Nay, Sister, that would be our Faults.

Aunt. Why, so it is our Faults now, Child, if we give

them wrong Characters.

First Niece. I do not say we should give wrong Chatacters; but I should be loth to say the utmost of a poor Servant, and so prejudice every body against her: Perhaps what she did amiss with me, she might mend with another, and perhaps what might not please me, another

might bear with.

Sec. Niece. I will put an End to all that immediately, Sister: I do not mean that I should enter into a long Acculation of a Servant, and give the History of her Life; or that I would blast her for Tristes, or give her an ill Name, for not suiting exactly to my Temper. But I speak in capital effential Articles, such as denominate a Wench a good or bad Servant; and I'll tell you a Case, when I went to a Lady myself to enquire about a Chambermaid who had been sent to me by another Person.

Aunt. But what was the Person that sent or recommen-

ded her? Did she know her?

Sec. Niece. She was an honest well-meaning poor Wo-

Aunt But then, I suppose did not know much of her

own Knowledge.

Sec. Niece. No, Madam, but the Maid gave me an Account where she had lived last, and I went to the Lady, and told her I came to enquire of such a Maid-Servant, who, as she had said, had lived with her. Yes, the told me, she had lived with her.

Pray how long did she live with you, Madam, said I. Pray, Madam, how long does she say she lived with

me? says She.

Almost a Year, Madam, Says I: I think it wanted but a Month or thereabouts: at which she made a kind of a

Hum, and faid nothing for a While.

Now I did not like the Way of answering my Question with a Question; for I thought she might have told me positively how long the Maid had lived with her, and left me to judge whether she had spoken Truth: Whereas by returning the Question upon me, she kept it in her own Breast to accuse or excuse her. So I turned it short upon her. I hope, Madam, says I, you will be so plain with me, as to let me know whether she says true or not.

Yes, yes, Madam, fays she.

This surprized me again; for this had a double Meaning as plain as could be, and it was impossible to know whether she meant, Yes, that it was as the Maid had said, or Yes, that she would let me know whether the Maid had said true or not. So I stopped a while to give her Time to go on, and explain herself; but finding she did not, I repeated my Question. Pray, Madam, says 1, be pleased to let me know exactly how long she lived with you.

Why, Madam, Says She, not quite a Year: The Maid

fays true in that.

I was far from being satisfied with that kind of Answer, the Manner of drawing out her Words shewing me plainly that the Wench had lied. However, lest I should quar-

rel

ıl

fc

m

Be

in

fo

fo

fty

her

for

not

cafic

not

my .

With

trou

I aff

she t

you !

beg j

I

(

tel with her too foon, and fo have no more out of her, I dropped it, and asked her some other Questions.

Pray, Madam, Jays I, is she a good Work-woman? Yes, yes, says she, she does her Work well enough.

This was all Equivocation again. Any body would have understood by my Question, that I inquired if she was good at her Needle, but she would not take it as I meant it, and put it off with an Answer that might be true, if the Wench knew how to make a Bed, or sweep a Room; so I explained myself and said, Madam, by a good Workwoman, I mean at her Needle, I hope you understand me.

Truly, Madam, fays she, I think she is well enough, I never put her to much of that Kind, having other Hands in the House.

Well, there she came better off with me a little than before, but still all this gave me no Character of the Maid's so I went on.

Pray, Madam, Says I, What do you say to her Hone

sty? She is honest, I hope.

I have no Reason to tax her Honesty, says she, she never wrong'd me of any Thing that I know of; I charge her with nothing.

Even this was but a very indifferent Way of vouching for a Girl's Honesty, and if she was really honest, she was

not just to her.

ft

y

th

n-

W

id.

aid

ier

did

be

ith

aid

er,

in-

ar-

Well, Madam, Jays I, may I alk you what was the Oca

casion of your parting with her?

O, Madam, Says Ibe, we parted indeed; the and I could not agree; I am passionate and pretty troublesome, and my Maid and I could not hit it; but she may do very well with another. Perhaps other Mistresses may not be so troublesome and difficult as I am; she may do very well; I assure you she knows how to please any Body but me; she told me so herself.

I was indeed provoked now, and answered, Madam, you are pleased to give yourself some hard Words; but I beg you will allow me to say, I did not come for a Character

racter of the Maid's Mistress, but a Character of the Maid; and I doubt, by your Discourse, you are willing to recommend your Maid's Character at the Expense of your own.

She only smiled at me, when I said thus, and said again, she was very difficult and ill to please; but Betty might do

very well with another.

I pressed her again to let me know what she parted with her Maid for; but still she shuffled me off, and gave me the cunningest evalve Auswers. Betty herself could not have put me off with half the Dexterity as her Mistress did; so I made my Honours as if I was going away.

Madam, fays I, you are exceeding tender of your Maid: But I cannot fay you are equally just to a Stranger, that you see resolved to depend upon your Word for the Character of a Servant. However, I shall take it the Way I hope you intend it, namely, that though it may not be for the Girl's Advantage to have the Particulars of her Behaviour told; yet you would have me understand by it, that her Conduct will not bear a Character, and that you would not have me venture upon her; and I shall take your Advice.

At this she seem'd concerned, as if she had expected that her aukward Way of talking of the Wench had satisfied me, and that I did not understand her; and as I offered to go, Pray, Madam, Says she, don't say so, Betty may make you a very good Servant; I am forry you should take me so; the Maid may do well in another Place, tho'

the might not fuit me.

As I was talking, I observed, that in the Drawing-Room to the Room we sat in, there sat a Gentleman reading in a great Book, and every now and then he looked off his Book, when his Wife (for it was her Husband) spoke, as if he was surprised at what she said; and as the Folding-doors stood wide open, so that the Rooms were as it were, let both into one, he heard all we said, and I perceived that as he looked off his Book when his Wife spoke, so he almost laughed outright when I spoke.

At

h

N

liv

fp

At last, as if he was not able to hold any longer, he clapped up the Book pretty hard, and threw it by, and came forward into the Room we were in, and making me a very low Bow as he paffed he offered to go out; when his Lady stept up to him, and faid something softly, which he answered foftly, and with Abundance of good Humour in his Face, faid to his Wife, My Dear, I will not interrupt you; upon which I offered to go away. By no means, Madam, said he, my Business is of no Moment. So taking Hold of his Wife's Hand, he as it were turned her towards me, and at going away, My Dear, fays he, don't hold the Lady in suspence about your Maid, for I hear that is the Business: Let her have a true Character of her; you would be glad to be dealt plainly with yourfelf. His Wife fmiled, but faid nothing at first, but presently turned to him, and all in a pleasant good Humour she gave him a little Tap on the Arm with her Hand: Do you give a Character of her, if you think I han't done it well. Must I? fays he: Why then, Madam, fays he to me, with my Wife's Leave, the is a damn'd Jade, a horrid Scold, a Liar; and tho' she has, I believe, stolen nothing from us, was a Thief in the Place the came last from, which we heard of fince, and for that very Thing my Wife turned her away.

I made him a Curt'sy, and told him I was greatly obliged to him for so much Sincerity, and sound his Lady had been only tender of her Maid's Character, but had not at all recommended her. Why, Madam. Says be, my Wife was cheated in this Wench, only by the People she lived with before, giving her ambiguous Answers, and speaking as favourably as they could; and that is the Ruin

of us all, adds be, in taking Servants.

But, Sir, fays I, the Lady she lived with before did your Lady a great deal of Wrong, if she knew her to be what

you fay she was in her Service.

I don't know, Madam, how 'twas for that: I never meddle with these Things, says he, but I believe my Wife was not so nice in her Inquiries as you are; or if she was,

the was easier to be cheated in their Answers; and 'tis the Ladies being thus backward to give just and plain Accounts to one another, that is the Reason that such a wretched Gang of Wenches run from House to House, and get Places, and behave in them as they do. Would the Ladies, fays be, be just to one another, speak plain and honestly, and give the Creatures fuch Characters as they deferve, they would take Care to deferve better Characters, and not behave so insolently, and so saucily as they do. This Jade, Madam, Jays be, that you come to enquire of, has infulted and taunted her Mistress two or three Times, at fuch a Rate that I have been forced to fend a Footman into the Room to bring her out by the Head and Shoulders, for fear her Mistress should be frighted; and yet she is so good to that Slut, that the cannot find in her Heart to peak the Truth of her.

My Dear, Jays the Lady, I have not faid any Thing but

Truth of her.

Well, my Dear, fays she again, I was not upon my Oath. Why, that is true too, Child, said be, but you are upon your Honour, and that is equivalent to an Oath; and it would be hard to have this Lady left to take such a Devil into her House, merely for fear of injuring the Wench; why, you would injure the Family you suffer to take her, much more than the Maid. Let her go seek her Fortune where no-body knows her, and there she may have Time to mend her Manners, and come to Town again.

dunt, Why, Niece, this Gentleman was your Instructor. I think 'tis just his Language that you speak; only I think you did not talk so moderately quite as he does.

Sec. Niece. And very good Language too, Madam; 'tis for want of this Gentleman's Rule that we have any fau-

ey, infolent, idle Servants in the World.

First Niece. It would make Servants more cautious of their Behaviour, I confess: But then, Sister, it would put it in the Power of Mistresses to ruin poor Servants when they pleased, and even when there was no good Cause; the Bread of a Servant would depend upon the Breath of a Mistress.

Mixture of Evil; no Convenience without its Inconvenience; but the Damage that Way, if it should be so at any Time, is infinitely less than the Mischief to Families which comes by the Insolence and Wickedness of Servants.

Junt. Nay, by the universal Degeneracy of Servants, you might have said; for even those we call good Servants at this Time are quite different Things from what they were in former Times, ay, ever since I can remember.

Sec. Niece. Well, Madam, but I could propose a Remedy even against that Part, which my Sister objects against, of doing Servants wrong; for I do not deny that some Mistresses may injure their Servants, and there ought to be no Wrong on either Hand.

First Niece. I have known a Mistress refuse to give a poor Servant a Character, only because she was unwilling to part with her, and yet at the same Time use her ill

too.

dsdd

Sec. Niece. Such Things may happen, I do not deny that.

First Niece. I have also known a Mistress injure a Servant by her Partiality in Favour of other Servants, and give a Maid an ill Character when she has not deserved it, by the mere Reproaches raised on her by others.

Sec. Niece. It is not possible to reckon up all the Cases in which a Mistress may injure a Servant; 2tis true, and there can no Rule be set so exact, as that no body shall be

oppressed: But I have two Things to say:

that Way, is not equal to that which Mistresses and Families now suffer from the Insolence and Baseness of Servants; and therefore the Remedy is to be embraced, and the lesser Evil chosen.

2. There may be Methods directed by the Law, that in such Cases, where Mistresses have nothing capital to charge upon a Servant, they shall

fhall be obliged to give them Certificates of their Behaviour.

Form of that Certificate be fettled and adjusted by that very Act of Parliament, the Mistresses will just write what they please, and when they are prejudiced against a Servant, will say nothing in their Certificates that shall do them any Service, or recommend them at all to any one else.

Sec. Niece. Those must be very malicious People that

will go that Length with a Servant.

First Niece. But such People there are, and such per-

haps always will be.

Sec. Niece. Well, there may be a Remedy for that too, for there may be two or three several Forms of Certificates directed by the Law; one Voluntier, and full to all the Behaviour of a Servant, and the other to her Hones fly and Sobriety only.

Aunt Why then, Child, no body would take a Servant that had only your Second-rate Certificate; they would prefently fay, her Mistress had given no Character but

what the could not help.

sec. Niece. I rather think, Madam, that all Servants would content themselves with what you are pleased to call my second-rate Certificate:

Aunt Come, let us hear what Kind of Certificate it is,

if you are Lawier enough to draw it up.

Sec. Niece. I am not Lawier enough to draw it up in Form; but it should be to this Purpose, Madam.

The CERTIFICATE.

ve th

I A. B. do hereby certify that the Bearer hereof M. B. lived with me as a Chambermaid one Year and a Quarter, ending ing the Day of last; during which Time she behaved herself honestly, modestly, and dutifully as became a Servant.

Witness my Hand,

A. B.

Aunt. Why truly, Niece, a Servant that could not deffer to much Character as that, no body ought to take.

Sec. Niece. Well, Madam, and a Servant that did deferve so much Character as that, no Millress ought to deny.

First Niece. But suppose, Sister, a Mistress would ma-

liciously deny it as I faid before.

Sec. Niece. Why then the Maid should have the same Remedy as she has for her Wages, viz. Complain to a Justice of Peace, that in Case upon the Mistress's being heard, if she could not give sufficient Reasons and Proof of the Fact, for which she refused such a Certificate, the Justice should sign the Certificate to the Maid, intimating that having heard all that could be alledg'd, he did not find there was sufficient Cause for refusing it.

Aunt. Well, Niece, and what was your First-Rate Cer-

tificate pray, that you call this the Second?

Sec. Niece. Why, Madam, when a Mistress may have a Kindness for a Servant, and is willing to give her an extraordinary Recommendation, she may add, that she is a very good Needlewoman, or that she is a very good Cook, that she was not only faithful, but diligent, and so in other Cases: But, as I said, I believe any Servant will be contented with the second, which is sufficient.

First Nice. I agree, that the giving such Certificates

would put an End to all those Enquiries.

Sec. Niece. Which oftentimes leave us in the Dark, as

much as we were before they were made; hay, and some-

times more a great deal-

Aunt. That is our Fault indeed, that we will not with Freedom and Plainness acquaint one another, what we are to expet from the Maids we hire; and 'tis presuming upon this charitable Disposition of Mistresses, that Maids behave so faucily as they do.

Sec. Niece. Well, if any of my Maids go from me I tell them plainly before-hand what they are to expect of me, and what Kind of Character I shall give 'em, if they fend

any Body to me-

First Niece. And what Effect has that upon them? Are

they the better for it?

Sec. Niece. Why, I'll tell you what Effect it had upon one of my Maids. I had told her my Mind very roundly one Day, upon the Occasion of something I did not like, and truly my Maid turned very short upon me, and told me she was forry she could not please me, and hoped I would provide myself then: I told her, that she should not say she could not please me, but that she would not please me.

She answer'd very pertly, that it was as I would, I might

take it which Way I pleased.

Very well, fays I, Mary, you are very tart with me. I hope when you fend your next Mistress to me for a Character, you will expect to hear those very Words as gain.

Why would I be so barbarous, said she, to rip up Words that pass'd in Anger, and give them for the Character of

any Servant?

No, Mary, says I, you should not say, will I be so barbarous; you should say, would I be so honest as to give a Character of you from your own Mouth. Depend upon it, Mary, says I, I shall not be so unjust to any Mistress to conceal a Thing of that Moment from them; why, it would be doing them the greatest Injury in the World.

She stood still a good while, and said nothing; but as the saw me looking at her, as if I expected an Answer, the Girl fell a crying, run to me, and offering to kneel to me, begged my Pardon, and told me she hoped I would allow her to recall her Warning, for she was resolved she would live with me till she had deserved a better Character.

Aunt. Poor Girl! I should have told her she might go when she would then, for she had deserved a better Cha-

racter just then.

i-

Sec. Niece. I did not say so to her, but I would not let her kneel; and I told her I would not insist upon her Warning; for as long as she behaved so to me, I should I believed never put her away.

Aung. Well, but did fhe mend afterwards?

Sec. Niece. Indeed, she was a very good Servant before, only a little hasty and impatient of Reproof, but she proved the best Servant after it that any body ever had. She is with me still.

Aunt. It is certainly so, if we give fair, bold, and just Characters of them, and it once came to be the Custom or general Usage among Mistresses, Servants would quickly carry it after another Manner; at least they would take Care to part upon as good terms as they could with their Mistresses.

Sec. Niece. Ay, and we should not cheat one another as we do now, in giving Characters to the vilest Creatures that fall in our Way.

Fig. Accept the property of the Accept to

Shannond fills a cast while, and he will also the cast while and fills are shared as the cast while and a state of the cast while a cast while while a cast while while a cast while while a cast will be a cast while a cast while a cast will be a cast while a cast while a cast will be a cast while a cast

celleded percent until be more a considerable of the first services.

Sec Ware, Indeed that colors and second teleracoly a little halfy and invalido bell Servacy a color and server and serve

Lie Les Met sin e move de la lace de lace de la lace de lace de

Characters of should and a course course to be allowed to be a construction of the course course of the course of

Acted descend new and new thock on the 'A' sail's sail's sail's sail wood or har had been and a sail a sail

